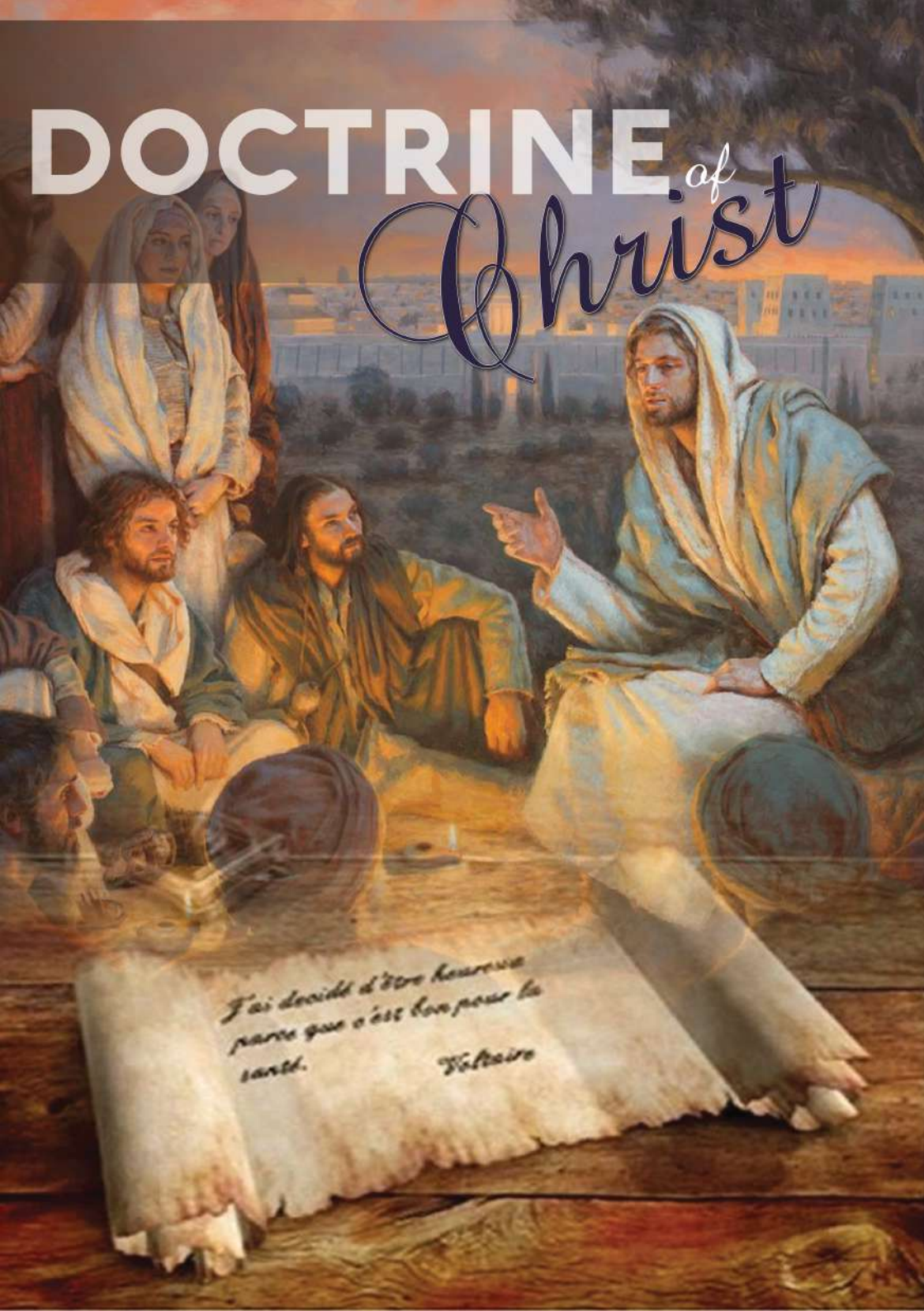


DOCTRINE^{of} Christ



*J'ai décidé d'être heureux
parce que c'est bon pour la
santé.*

Voltaire

Compiled by:

El-Azar

Published by:

Berashith Ministry

© 2021

First edition November 2021 Version 3.0

Second edition July 2024 Version 4.0

Third edition May 2025 Version 5.0

Cover designed by Utilisoft

Kallie du Plessis

Edited by

Estre-Lize Joubert

There is no copyright on our material.

Please feel free to make as many copies as needed for free distribution.

Not for resale.

Website: www.berashithministry.co.za

email: BethesdaHealingOasis@gmail.com

TABLE OF CONTENTS

TABLE OF CONTENTS III

FOREWORD..... 1

THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST 5

THE DOCTRINE OF DEMONS 9

WARNING AGAINST APOSTASY 13

PART 1: PERSONAL FOUNDATION 17

INTRODUCTION: A PERSONAL FOUNDATION..... 18

LAYING DOWN THE FOUNDATION..... 18

THE FIVE-FOLD MINISTRY 21

THE PERSONAL FOUNDATION – JESUS CHRIST 23

EAT THE WORD OF GOD 27

HOW TO BUILD UPON THIS FOUNDATION 32

WHO IS THIS MESSIAH?..... 34

MY NAMES..... 35

MY SON IN THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENTS..... 37

MY FEASTS 43

MY TABERNACLE 48

MY ATTRIBUTES 76

DIG DEEP..... 91

THE WORD OF GOD..... 99

THE VALUE OF THE SCRIPTURES 103

THE NATURE OF GOD’S WORD 106

SOME OF GOD’S PROMISES OF HEALING. 118

PART 2: DOCTRINAL FOUNDATION..... 121

INTRODUCTION..... 122

A DOCTRINAL FOUNDATION..... 122

MATURITY 123

ON A ROCK 125

REPENTANCE..... 129

FAITH AND REPENTANCE 130

THE SNARE OF SATAN 134

SICKNESSES AND DISEASES 134

CHANGING YOUR MIND 138

BEING DOUBLE-MINDED 139

GRACE AND MERCY 141

LIVING STONES 142

FALSE REPENTANCE 144

THE NATURE OF REPENTANCE	147
FAITH TOWARD GOD.....	150
WHAT THEN IS FAITH?	151
OUR FAITH WILL BE TESTED	153
FAITH RELATES US TO OUR HIGH PRIEST	154
WHAT IF MY PRAYERS SEEM TO BE UNANSWERED?	155
WHAT ARE YOU DECLARING?	157
A PERSONAL RELATIONSHIP	159
PRAYING IN THE NAME OF JESUS	160
CHRIST OUR ADVOCATE	162
IN JESUS, WE CAN CLAIM EVERYTHING	163
FAITH AND WORKS	164
FRUIT	168
BORN FROM FREE- AND SLAVE WOMAN	170
WHAT IS PAUL TALKING ABOUT?	174
PAUL’S PERSONAL APPEAL	180
AN OLD TESTAMENT ALLEGORY	180
MINISTERS OF THE NEW COVENANT	182
THE NATURE OF GRACE	187

THE LAW	188
FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS DEAD	196
DOCTRINE OF BAPTISMS	197
SOMEONE, IN AND UNTO	199
ONE BAPTISM	201
GOD'S ORIGINAL PLAN	210
CREATED FOR A PURPOSE	212
CREATOR GOD IS MAN'S SOURCE	213
THE PACKAGE DEAL	221
BORN-AGAIN BAPTISM	225
OUR NEW BIRTH	226
SAUL OF TARSUS	231
THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THIS BAPTISM	237
WE NEED A BORN-AGAIN EXPERIENCE.	237
PETER'S TEACHING AFTER RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT	242
RELEASED FROM SINS.	242
THE BELIEVER'S BAPTISM	247
JOHN THE BAPTIST	248
WATER BAPTISM	249

THE BLOOD OF JESUS	252
UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS	252
FULFILLING ALL RIGHTEOUSNESS	255
BAPTISM BY JESUS	267
A SYMBOL OF GOD'S APPROVAL	268
IN ONE ACCORD	272
THE HOLY SPIRIT	273
QUENCHING THE SPIRIT	273
THE SEAL	274
PURPOSE	277
UNITY	278
A PERSONAL WARNING	280
REQUIREMENTS FOR BAPTISM	287
MORE ON PRAYING IN TONGUES	299
CIRCUMCISION OF THE HEART	301
INHERITING GOD'S KINGDOM	303
BAPTISM OF FIRE	305
VICTORY	312
THE SHULAMITE BRIDE	313

BAPTISM OF SUFFERING.....	315
LAYING ON OF HANDS.....	333
OLD TESTAMENT _____	334
NEW TESTAMENT _____	338
RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD.....	345
CHRIST’S RESURRECTION CONFIRMED IN THE OLD TESTAMENT	347
NEW TESTAMENT WITNESSES _____	353
BEGOTTEN AGAIN/BORN AGAIN _____	355
JUSTIFICATION _____	358
COMMITMENT _____	360
SEATED IN RULERSHIP _____	365
OVERCOMERS _____	366
BEING A WITNESS _____	366
OUR HOPE _____	368
THE DIFFERENT HARVESTS _____	371
ETERNAL JUDGMENT.....	374
JUDGMENT FOLLOWS RESURRECTION _____	374
BLESSING OR PUNISHMENT _____	376
PRINCIPLES _____	378

THE RIGHTEOUS JUDGE	380
PATTERNS OF JUDGMENTS.....	382
THE PARABLE OF THE MINAS	382
THE PARABLE ABOUT STEWARDSHIP	384
SUMMARY	387
JUDGMENTS.....	387
THE BEMA SEAT	388
WE WILL STAND BEFORE THE BEMA	391
EVALUATION	391
REVEALED BY FIRE	392
WE MUST GIVE AN ACCOUNT	393
PASSING THE TEST	393
COUNTED WORTHY	399
PURIFICATION	402
OUR REWARDS	403
JUDGMENT OF THE EARTH	405
JUDGMENT OF ISRAEL	406
BLESSING AND JUDGMENT	408
SATAN BOUND FOR A THOUSAND YEARS	410

THE ANTICHRIST AND THE FALSE PROPHET	411
SHEEP AND GOATS	411
THE LORD WILL JUDGE THE NATIONS	413
THE GREAT WHITE THRONE.....	413
WHEN THIS WILL HAPPEN	419

THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST

FOREWORD

The Apostle Paul says he has much to say to us, although it is difficult to explain because we have become too dull and sluggish to understand. We should already have been “**professors instructing others**” and rabbis ourselves, but instead, we need to be taught the basics of God’s prophetic oracles! We are like children still needing milk and not yet ready to digest solid food (Hebrews 5:11-14).

Paul mentions the foundational Doctrine of Christ that is needed by the Body of Christ to reach maturity.

*Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of **repentance** from dead works, and of **faith** toward God, ² Of the doctrine of **baptisms**, and of **laying on of hands**, and of **resurrection** of the dead, and of eternal **judgment**. ³ And this will we do, if God **permit**.
Hebrews 6:1-3 KJV*

This book focuses on laying down a solid foundation for the believer, so when the storm comes, the house will stand and not collapse.

They are like a person building a house, who dug a deep hole to lay the foundation on rock. When a flood came, the floodwaters pushed against that house but couldn't shake it, because it had been founded on the rock. Luke 6:48 ISV

The following scripture gives a clear indication of the necessity of such a solid foundation in our lives.

Then you will be God's servant, fully mature and perfectly prepared to fulfill any assignment God gives you. 2 Timothy 3:17 TPT

The Lord is restoring His children to their original state as before the fall. He is raising an army for Himself, which will be fully mature in the image and likeness of Adonai, ready to fulfil any assignment on His command. It is like military training, where only the best-of-the-best are eventually chosen for the battle. Remember Gideon's army! Only 300 of the original 32 000 soldiers remained! Read Judges 7 to see how Adonai sent back those who did not belong in the battle.

Background

In the year 2000, I committed myself to the Lord for full-time ministry. God spent 14 years preparing me for this ministry and another seven years intensely training and educating me through the Holy Spirit for healing ministry.

For many years, I had been searching for the Doctrine of Christ without success. Then, during those years of preparation, the Lord revealed it to me little by little, piece by piece, precept upon precept. What He revealed to me will be the content of this book.

Since the beginning of this year, 2021, I have been sensing that the time for a new season has arrived! I eagerly waited for God to reveal to me exactly what this new season would require of His children. Over months, this new approaching season has been confirmed by several

international ministries such as Paul Davis from White Dove Ministries, who released several announcements in this regard.

On the 13th of April 2021, a Word of God came to me through a friend.

*My **servant**, I will make you **My signet ring**; for I have **chosen** you to **lay the foundation of this house**; your hands shall also complete it. (Haggai 2:23; Zechariah 4:9)*

While I was meditating on this word, the Lord continued with the following verses.

*This is the word of the Lord to Zerubbabel: 'Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit,' says the Lord of hosts. **'Who are you, O great mountain?** Before Zerubbabel you shall become a plain! And he shall bring forth the capstone with shouts of 'Grace, grace to it!' Zechariah 4:6-7 NKJV*

The hands of Zerubbabel have laid the foundation of this house; his hands shall also complete it. Zechariah 4:9 KJV

What are these two olive trees upon the right side of the candlestick and upon the left side thereof? ¹² And I answered again, and said unto him, What be these two olive branches which through the two golden pipes empty the golden oil out of themselves? ¹³ And he answered me and said, Knowest thou not what these be? And I said, No, my lord. ¹⁴ Then said he, These are the two anointed ones, that stand by the Lord of the whole earth. Zechariah 4:11b-14 KJV

The message to lay down the foundation to restore His temple was clear. But we will not accomplish this by might or by power, but through His Holy Spirit. Therefore, the emphasis is on the two olive branches which provide the oil (the Holy Spirit) through two golden pipes. It will be a constant flow of oil (Holy Spirit) that will level any great mountain standing in the way of accomplishing this assignment.

As a result of the above message from God, this book was written. It consists of two main parts, analysing the Doctrine of Christ.

Part 1 lays down the foundation of Yashuah, which is a personal foundation. We will focus on the only foundation to be laid down – Yashuah HaMashiach! There can be NO other foundation!

For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. 1 Corinthians 3:11 KJV

Part 2 discusses the doctrinal foundation and predominantly focuses on the six basic elements, as explained in Hebrews 6:1-3.

*Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of **repentance** from dead works, and of **faith** toward God, ² Of the doctrine of **baptisms**, and of **laying on of hands**, and of **resurrection** of the dead, and of eternal **judgment**. ³ And this will we do, if God **permit**.*
Hebrews 6:1-3 KJV

Here we find seven important principles of the Doctrine of Christ which enable the believer to lay down the foundation.

- Repentance of dead works.
- Faith toward God.
- The doctrine of baptisms.

- Laying on of hands.
- The resurrection of the dead.
- Eternal judgment.
- And last, but not least – “If God Permit!”

Any foundation must first be inspected and approved before the structure of the building can be erected. If the building inspector is satisfied, he approves of it using a stamp of authority. Similarly, Adonai first needs to **permit** (approve) the restoration of the foundation by using this signet ring as His stamp of approval! This is the doctrinal foundation which is deemed necessary to ensure that our houses will stand when the storm comes. We have confidence that this “**temple**” will stand and last because of Jesus’ promise.

He who comes to me and hears my words and does it (acts upon them) is like a person building a house, who digs a deep hole to lay the foundation on rock. When the storm comes, it pushes against that house but cannot shake it, because it has been founded on the rock. Luke 6:47-48

The opposite is therefore also true. He who does not **HEAR** and does not **DO** and does not **Dig Deep**, when the storm comes, his house will surely collapse.

The Doctrine of Christ

For quite a while, the Lord has been teaching me from Hebrews 6. For many years, I have been pursuing the exact meaning of the “Doctrine of Christ”. I now better understand it, although I do not at all claim to know everything!

It is like building a house. When you do not lay down a good foundation, the building will be unstable, and cracks will appear. I have seen buildings collapse because of poor foundations. Likewise, because of inappropriate and insignificant foundations laid down in the Body of Christ, the building, God's Temple, is unstable and cannot effectively withstand the daily storms in our lives.

Although there is some doubt about who the author of Hebrews was, I am convinced it was Paul. He lists six basic elements that must be laid down before we can proceed to restore the temple.

Therefore, leaving behind the elementary teachings about the Messiah, let us continue to be carried along to maturity, not laying again a foundation of repentance from dead actions, faith toward God, instruction about baptisms, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. And this we will do, if God permits. Hebrews 6:1-3 ISV

It is a pity that many members of the Body of Christ are still very immature and without a firm foundation.

Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? 1 Corinthians 3:16 KJV

We are the temple where God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit dwell.

What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? 1 Corinthians 6:19 KJV

The Temple of the Living God

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? ¹⁵ And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? ¹⁶ And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 2 Corinthians 6:14-16 KJV

We cannot accommodate darkness, unrighteousness, or any doctrine of demons in our lives and think the Holy Spirit will still abide in us.

*What harmony can there be between Christ and Satan? And also what does a believer have in common with an unbeliever? ¹⁶ What friendship does God's temple have with demons? For indeed, we are the temple of the living God, just as God has said: I will make my home in them and walk among them. I will be their God, and they will be my people. ¹⁷ For this reason, '**Come out from among them and be separate,**' says the Lord. 'Touch nothing that is unclean, and I will embrace you. ¹⁸ I will be a true Father to you, and you will be my beloved sons and daughters,' says the Lord Yahweh Almighty. 2 Corinthians 6:15-18 TPT.*

Yehôvâh Elohim wants sons and daughters for Himself. Elohim is the plural form of Eloah, referring to the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. We are all born from a corruptible seed and need a born-again

experience - this time, from an incorruptible seed. He adopted us and when the Holy Spirit abides in us, we cry out, "ABBA FATHER!" That is "Daddy!" (Romans 8:15; Galatians 4:6)

To grow into full maturity, we need a strong, deep foundation. This can only be done when we preach Christ and bring every person into full understanding of the truth.

Christ is our message! We preach to awaken hearts and bring every person into the full understanding of truth. It has become my inspiration and passion in ministry to labor with a tireless intensity, with his power flowing through me, to present to every believer the revelation of being his perfect one in Jesus Christ. Colossians 1:28-29 TPT

Only then can the entire building be erected and continually grow until it rises to completion. What an amazing statement Paul makes when he says the Holy Spirit is transforming every one of us into the Holy of Holies – His dwelling place!

This entire building is under construction and is continually growing under his supervision until it rises up completed as the holy temple of the Lord himself. ²² This means that God is transforming each one of you into the Holy of Holies, his dwelling place, through the power of the Holy Spirit living in you!
Ephesians 2:21-22 TPT

Before we can be transformed into the Holy of Holies, we need to lay down the foundation. Then, the building can be under construction until it reaches full completion – the Holy of Holies where Christ Jesus, the

Anointed One, with the Holy Spirit and our Abba Father, can dwell permanently.

I trust you now understand the purpose of this book and that each of us has an assignment to fulfil.

The Doctrine of Demons

If there is a Doctrine of Christ, then surely there must also be a doctrine of demons! A doctrine of demons is a set of beliefs or teachings that demons try to propagate throughout the church to deceive the believers. Since demons are not visible, they must take a deceptive route to get their false message heard. They are just like their leader, Satan, the "father of lies" (John 8:44). Is this not what Paul is trying to tell us in 2 Corinthians 6:15 when he asks, "*What harmony can there be between Christ and Satan?*"

Paul says to Timothy that some will depart from the faith. Notice "**the faith**". It is not any faith, but THE faith in Christ Jesus.

Some Will Depart from the Faith

Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; ² Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; ³ Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. ⁴ For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving: ⁵ For it is

sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

1 Timothy 4:1- 5 KJV

The English Standard Version mentions that "*consciences are seared*".

Now the Spirit expressly says that in later times some will depart from the faith by devoting themselves to deceitful spirits and teachings of demons, through the insincerity of liars whose consciences are seared. 1 Timothy 4:1 ESV

The word "sear" means to distress, grieve, sadden, make miserable/wretched, upset, trouble, harrow, cause anguish to, afflict, perturb, disturb; hurt, wound, pain, cut to the quick; affect, move, sting, mortify, torment, torture, gnaw at, vex, gall.

So, how do the demons promote their message? They do it through false teachers, "*through the insincerity of liars whose consciences are seared.*" Jesus warns us to "*Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravenous wolves.*" (Matthew 7:15)

We can explain this by using the following example. If you repeatedly touch a hot stove and burn your hand, that area on your hand becomes "seared".

- Often, a hard bump forms on the skin and there is a lack of sensitivity in the nerves in that area.
- Having a seared conscience means it has been scorched or burned, indicating a lack of sensitivity or care.
- False teachers have a seared conscience. Instead of remaining sensitive to the Spirit, they live hypocritical lives.
- Whether knowingly or unknowingly, their spiritual gauge is "off".

- They lack the discernment they need to keep in step with Christ and instead are susceptible to the doctrines of demons, both hearing it and teaching it to others.
- They do not know how to differentiate between the voice of the Holy Spirit and the voice of evil spirits.
- They may seem to be holy, but they are living in sin and leading others to do the same.

Paul warns there are many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them is without significance (1 Corinthians 14:10 KJV). That means, Saints, these voices have meaning in our lives.

I suppose that there are hundreds of different languages in the world, and all are excellent for those who understand them, ¹¹ but to me they mean nothing. A person talking to me in one of these languages will be a stranger to me and I will be a stranger to him. 1 Corinthians 14:10-11 TLB

When we listen to these wrong voices, we embrace the doctrine of demons! Paul said those voices meant nothing to him! Why do we, however, understand these voices? Why do they have meaning to us?

Examples of such voices are:

I am useless! I am ugly! Nobody loves me!

I feel guilty about my past.

I am rejected by everyone.

I hate my spouse and my children.

I hate the person who did me wrong.

I hate myself.

I reject myself.

Over time, we come into agreement with these voices, and they then have meaning in our lives. The hypothalamus gland in our brain senses the conflict between the soul and spirit, which causes the imbalances of hormones in our bodies. These imbalances create the perfect environment for sicknesses and diseases. They manifest in our bodies and keep us in bondage. Confusion enters and we start blaming God for allowing these bad things to happen. All because we gave ear to the wrong voices!

I am so glad that Paul gave us the weapon to overcome these voices. Meditate on the following scripture and apply it to your life.

For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: ⁴ (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) ⁵ Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;

2 Corinthians 10:3-5 KJV

When these thoughts (voices) speak to you, you should immediately take hold of them by saying, "Lord, this is not from You, and this is not from me. Thus, it must be from the devil. I now bring this thought, this imagination, to You! I submit it to You." I guarantee that every evil thought, imagination and voice will leave immediately.

You have 20 seconds to take such thoughts captive. By delaying, that thought or imagination will take root after 20 minutes. When you do not deal with it, it will sprout, grow, and bear fruit. By then, you will find yourself in a situation where works of the flesh are manifest, which are:

*Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,
20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations,
wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21 envyings, murders,
drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell
you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they
which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.*
Galatians 5:19b-21 KJV

Deceitful spirits brought the doctrine of demons into this world. They deceived Eve and thus brought sin into the world. Satan is a master manipulator, which is why doctrines of demons are so rampant. They have been his proven strategy since the beginning. In His Word, God gives us everything we need to resist the temptations of the enemy and discern true doctrine from false doctrine.

We should pay attention to any red flags when exposing ourselves to teachings, and take them to the Lord. Search the Word and ask God for wisdom and discernment (James 1:5; 1 John 4:1-3). When we know what the Bible says, we will recognise contrary teachings.

(For a complete discussion on the Doctrine of Demons, please download the book, "The Doctrine of Demons", from our website: www.berashithministry.co.za)

WARNING AGAINST APOSTASY

Before Paul even instructed to lay down the foundation, he warned about apostasy. The Greek word "***apostasia***" means a departure from "the faith".

*Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are **dull of hearing**.¹² For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach*

you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. ¹³ For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. ¹⁴ But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil. Hebrews 5:11-14 KJV

Remember Paul's warning in 1 Timothy 4:1, that some would depart from the faith. He uses the word "seared", meaning the mind has been scorched or burned, indicating a lack of sensitivity or care. This is what false teachers are doing. Satan is using many voices to come against our minds. Over time, our consciences become seared, instead of remaining sensitive to the Spirit. The result is that we become dull of hearing and are no longer sensitive to the Word of God. Paul continues that we are supposed to already be spiritual rabbis, but it seems we need to go back to the first oracles before we can move on to more profound truths. We come to wrong conclusions because we lack the right foundation and principles in our lives, which will offer us effective tools and fundamental truths to come to the correct conclusions. Because of our seared consciences, we have a distorted image of Christ Jesus, the Anointed One. The moment we have a distorted image of Yashuah, we live in doubt and unbelief and flutter without direction, like a stray crow in the sky!

In the ancient Biblical scrolls, there were no capitals or chapters. So, directly after Hebrews 5, Paul continued with Hebrews 6:1-2.

Therefore, leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation...

- *of repentance from dead works, and*
- *of faith toward God,*
- *of the doctrine of baptisms, and*
- *of laying on of hands, and*
- *of resurrection of the dead, and*
- *of eternal judgment.*

God never intends for us to stay in First Grade. We must move on and graduate. In the secular world, before we can write, we need to learn the letters of the alphabet. Only then will we be ready to write words, then sentences, and then formulate paragraphs and thoughts. We need to apply this same principle to our daily walk with Christ Jesus. We need the basics before we can move on.

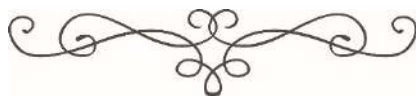
Notice that Paul mentioned “**repentance**” as the very first aspect to deal with when laying down the foundation. It is impossible to be saved without repentance. Few understand the meaning of the word. A full discussion on repentance will be done in Part 2.

- Faith toward God (*not anything else*) is essential for salvation.
- Baptisms (plural - multiple baptisms) are foundational.
- Laying on of hands is a doctrine.
- The resurrection of the dead is the heart of our faith.
- Eternal judgment. Many wrongly believe that being in Christ means there is no judgment, but if we do not **meet Christ in repentance**, we will **meet Him in judgment!**

“And this will we do, if God permit” (Hebrews 6:3 KJV) is a very important verse. As already stated, when you erect a building, the

inspector must first inspect the foundation and then permit you to build. Christ will not permit you to build your house before the correct foundation has been laid down. Many try to complete the building for the Holy Spirit to abide, but the building is unstable.

Not only are these basic principles fundamental to the laying down of the foundation but there is also a specific sequence of events needed to complete the structure. It is impossible to install the window frames before there are any walls. You cannot call the carpenter to install cabinets or the tiler to lay the tiles before the floor and the walls are completed. Likewise, it is impossible for your spiritual building to be erected and transformed into the Holy of Holies before your foundation has been inspected by the Anointed One. Only then will He permit you to start with the construction work.



PART 1: PERSONAL FOUNDATION

INTRODUCTION: A PERSONAL FOUNDATION

Laying Down the Foundation

Jesus told a parable describing how we should build our houses.

Build Your House on the Rock

*And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? ⁴⁷ Whosoever cometh to me, and **heareth my sayings, and doeth them**, I will shew you to whom he is like: ⁴⁸ He is like a man which built an house, **and digged deep**, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. ⁴⁹ But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.*
Luke 6:46-49 KJV

Jesus guarantees that storms will come regardless of the surface on which your house is built. Only those who “HEARETH and DOETH” God’s Word, who digs deep and lay down the foundation on the ROCK, will withstand and survive the storm. The houses of those who do not listen and do will surely collapse.

My dearly beloved, do not continue reading before you make a decision! Are you willing to HEAR **and** DO? If not, you are wasting your time seeking any further truths. The foundation of the Doctrine of Christ is based on HEARING and DOING!

Hearing and doing are the foundation that sets the limits for your building.

Paul gave further instructions for laying down the foundation.

For we are God's co-workers. You are God's farmland and God's building. 1 Corinthians 3:9 ISV

*According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder (architect), **I have laid the foundation**, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. ¹¹ **For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.** 1 Corinthians 3:10-11 KJV*

Christ Our Cornerstone

*Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members of the household of God, ²⁰ **having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief cornerstone.** Ephesians 2:19-20 TPT*

There can be no other way to lay down the foundation. The foundation of any believer's building is Christ Jesus, the Anointed One. If you desire to transform your building into the Holy of Holies, then you need the CORNERSTONE.

Didn't you ever read this in the Scriptures? 'The stone that the builders rejected has now become the cornerstone.

This is the Lord's doing, and it is wonderful to see.

Matthew 21:42 NLT

Read again Ephesians 2:20, which says, "*Having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief cornerstone.*"

The erection of a building starts in a corner.

That cornerstone is Christ Jesus!

Paul continues to explain the five-fold ministry, also referred to as "Ministry Gifts" or the "Grace Ministry".

*And he has appointed some with grace to be **apostles**, and some with grace to be **prophets**, and some with grace to be **evangelists**, and some with grace to be **pastors**, and some with grace to be **teachers**.¹² And their calling is to nurture and prepare all the holy believers **to do their own works of ministry**, and as they do this they will **enlarge and build up the body of Christ**.¹³ These grace ministries will function until we all attain oneness into the faith, until we all experience the fullness of what it means to know the Son of God, and finally we become one into a **perfect man** with the full dimensions of spiritual maturity and fully developed into the abundance of Christ.*

Ephesians 4:11-13 TPT

Adonai gave us apostles, prophets, teachers, pastors, and evangelists to equip the Body of Christ so each one can grow to full maturity and be ready for their own works of ministry. That means being ready for any assignment.

Then you will be God's servant, fully mature and perfectly prepared to fulfill any assignment God gives you.

2 Timothy 3:17 TPT

The Hebrew and Aramaic word for “**perfect**” is “**gamar**”. The word implies that perfection cannot come to the Body of Christ without the example and teaching of these five ministries - apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers. Ignoring these five ministry gifts of the ascended Christ is to despise the gifts that God gave the church. (A complete discussion on this topic is available in my book, “*The Gift of Giving*”, which can be downloaded from our website for free.)

The Five-Fold Ministry

The ministry gifts serve to reveal the plan of God. They are characteristic of a full-time office or calling, rather than a gift that can function in and through any believer. The ministry gifts were once presented to me through a five-finger illustration that I will never forget.

- **Apostle** – An apostle establishes and builds churches. He is a church planter. An apostle may function in some or all the ministry gifts. He is the “**thumb**”, the strongest of the fingers, able to touch every other finger.
- **Prophet** – Prophet in Greek means to “**forth tell**”, in the sense of speaking for another. A prophet functions as God’s mouthpiece, speaking forth God’s Word. The prophet is the “**index finger**”, or pointer finger. He points to the future and points out sin.

- **Evangelist** – An evangelist is called to be a witness for Jesus Christ. He works for the local church to bring people into the Body of Christ where they can be discipled. He may evangelise through music, drama, preaching, and other creative ways. He is the “**middle finger**”, the tallest one, who stands out in the crowd. Evangelists draw a lot of attention, but they are called to serve the local body.
- **Pastor** – The pastor is the shepherd of the people. A true shepherd lays down his life for the sheep. The pastor is the “**ring finger**”. He is married to the church, called to stay, oversee, nurture and guide.
- **Teacher** – The teacher and the pastor are often a shared office, but not always. The teacher lays the foundation and is concerned with detail and accuracy. He delights in research to validate the truth. The teacher is the “**pinkie finger**”. Though seemingly small and insignificant, he is designed specifically for digging into tight, dark places, shining a light and picking apart the word of truth.

It is clear from the above descriptions that the main reason so many buildings are collapsing is that apostles and prophets do not lay down the foundation. A teacher or a shepherd cannot lay down the foundation. What a pity that self-appointed pastors, shepherds and evangelists do not acknowledge the office of the apostle and the prophets anymore. By not acknowledging the five-fold ministry in the Body of Christ, we do not discern the Lord’s body and that is why so many are weak and sick. The five-fold ministry was ordained by Adonai for the perfecting of the saints,

the work of the ministry, and the edification of the Body of Christ (Ephesians 4:11-12).

There is no suggestion anywhere in scripture that an “institution” should appoint a pastor to gather “congregation members” and then keep them in spiritual immaturity. Throughout the Scriptures, it is Adonai who appoints. No one should be elected. God’s word is clear that these ministry gifts are given by Adonai to nurture and prepare all the holy believers **to do their own works of ministry**, and, as they do this, they **enlarge and build up the Body of Christ** (Ephesians 4:12 TPT).

Congregations normally do not acknowledge these ministry gifts in the members of the Body of Christ who has a calling on their lives to do their own works of ministry. This explains why the building is not being enlarged.

THE PERSONAL FOUNDATION – JESUS CHRIST

There is both a personal foundation and a doctrinal foundation. The personal foundation of Yashuah HaMashiach is to see Him throughout the Bible, from Genesis to Revelation.

At first, the Old Testament may seem to be merely a historical book, but as you study the Written Word of God, the Living Word of God, Yashuah, will be revealed to you. What a wonderful experience to see the revealed Yashuah in Genesis as the “seed”, as the Passover Lamb in Exodus, the High Priest in Leviticus, His manifested presence in Numbers, etc.

Likewise, in the New Testament, we see Him as the King in Matthew, the Servant in Mark, the Son of Man in Luke, the Son of God in John, etc. We need to meet our First Love before we can erect our houses or the temple where He can abide and dwell permanently. Having a twisted perception of Him will easily mislead you and blind you to the truth. The result is that you will be kept in bondage in satan's keep net.

Yashuah asked His disciples, **"But whom say ye that I am?"** (Matthew 16:15)

Today I am asking you the same question.

"Who do you say Yashuah is?"

Simon Peter answered that question divinely. **"Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God."**

And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. ¹⁸ and I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. Matthew 16:17-18 KJV

We are familiar with this scripture, but few truly understand what Yashuah means here. The name "Peter" is "**Petros**" in Greek. It refers to a rock, a small stone (like the small stones used for stoning people to death), or a boulder. But when Yashuah used the term, "**upon this rock**", He used a different Greek word, namely "**petra**" which refers to a cliff, something on that scale, which is part of the bedrock. The bedrock is the recognition of who He is, as revealed by the Holy Spirit! It is, therefore, upon this "**petra**" that Christian faith must be based. Not on the Carpenter's Son but on the Son of GOD.

A life-changing encounter with Yashuah HaMashiach is the only experience that can change your life. This encounter Peter had revealed to him who Yashuah was.

Jesus is the only way into the Kingdom. He said, “***I am the door***” (John 10:9). There was no other way to enter the Tabernacle but through the entrance. That was why the Jewish people wanted to crucify Him when He said He was the door. Their human brains could not grasp that He was the only way to enter the Kingdom of God.

This conversation between Yashuah and His disciples discloses an important lesson when laying down the foundation of the Christian faith.

- First, Peter experienced a ***confrontation*** with who Jesus was.
- Then there was a ***revelation*** through the Holy Spirit.
- Peter then responded to this revelation from the Holy Spirit by acknowledging who Jesus was.
- Lastly, Peter made this revelation a public ***confession***.

The disciples knew Yashuah as the Carpenter’s Son, but in Peter’s confrontation with the very important question of who Yashuah was, the Holy Spirit revealed a much deeper truth to him, namely that He was indeed the **true Son of God**.

How about you? Have you had any confrontations in your life, after which the Holy Spirit revealed a deep truth to you? Did you ignore the revelation, or did you acknowledge and share it with others in a public confession?

John was the beloved disciple, the only one who laid his head on Yashuah’s chest, but when he had a confrontation with the Holy Spirit

on the Island of Patmos, the realisation of who He was, made him fall to the ground as if he was dead.

As humans, we will never completely understand who the Messiah is! With our defective perceptions and inadequate understanding, we tend to limit Him in a box, but until eternity, there will always be something new to discover about our incomprehensible God. Even when we walk as closely with Him as John did, we will fall to our knees when the Holy Spirit reveals another aspect of the Messiah because of the greatness of the revelation!

Jesus revealed to John a picture of four animals before the throne of God, each with six wings. They were discovering the greatness and holiness of Yehôvâh Elohim day and night! Without rest, they constantly fell down, crying out, "HOLY, HOLY, HOLY, LORD ALMIGHTY!"

And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come. Revelation 4:8 KJV

The beloved apostle, John, knew Yashuah as the Carpenter's Son (the Son of Man) and also had first-hand experience of Him as the Son of God. Yet, he had never before encountered Him as having hair white as wool and glistening like snow, eyes like flames of fire, feet like bright metal and a voice like the roar of rushing waters! This encounter with the Messiah caused John to fall down like a dead man!

I, John, am your brother and companion in tribulation, the kingdom, and the patience that are found in Jesus. I was exiled on the island of Patmos because of the word of God and the testimony of Jesus. ¹⁰ I was in the spirit realm on

the Lord's day, and I heard behind me a loud voice sounding like a trumpet, ¹¹ saying to me: Write in a book what you see and send it to the seven churches: to Ephesus, to Smyrna, to Pergamum, to Thyatira, to Sardis, to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea. ¹² When I turned to see the voice that was speaking to me, I saw seven golden lampstands. ¹³ And walking among the lampstands, **I saw someone like a son of man, wearing a full-length robe with a golden sash over his chest.** ¹⁴ **His head and his hair were white like wool — white as glistening snow. And his eyes were like flames of fire!** ¹⁵ **His feet were gleaming like bright metal, as though they were glowing in a fire, and his voice was like the roar of many rushing waters.** ¹⁶ In his right hand he held seven stars, and out of his mouth was a sharp, double-edged sword. And his face was shining like the brightness of the blinding sun! ¹⁷ When I saw him, I fell down at his feet as good as dead, but he laid his right hand on me and I heard his reassuring voice saying: Don't yield to fear. I am the Beginning and I am the End, ¹⁸ the Living One! I was dead, but now look—I am alive forever and ever. And I hold the keys that unlock death and the unseen world. Revelation 1:9-18 TPT

Eat the Word of God

If we want to know Him and desire to have a similar encounter to John's, we must devour the Written Word, so the Living Word can be manifested

in us as the Holy Spirit manifested through Peter, and through John on the Island of Patmos. We will realise then that the Messiah is the same yesterday, today, and forever!

Jesus Christ the same yesterday and today and for the ages. Hebrews 13:8 JUB

During his trials and persecutions, the Prophet Jeremiah experienced that the one single thing that kept him going, was the sweet Word of God when he ate it.

[Jeremiah said] O Lord, You know and understand; [earnestly] remember me and visit me and avenge me on my persecutors. Take me not away [from joy or from life itself] in Your longsuffering [to my enemies]; know that for Your sake I suffer and bear reproach. ¹⁶ Your words were found, and I ate them; and Your words were to me a joy and the rejoicing of my heart, for I am called by Your name, O Lord God of hosts. Jeremiah 15:15- 16 AMPC

So also, did John on the Island of Patmos when the voice came from heaven again to instruct him to eat the little book.

Then the voice that I heard from heaven spoke again to me, saying, Go and take the little book (scroll) which is open on the hand of the angel who is standing on the sea and on the land. ⁹ So I went up to the angel and asked him to give me the little book. And he said to me, Take it and eat it. It will embitter your stomach, though in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey. ¹⁰ So I took the little book from the angel's hand and ate and swallowed it; it was as sweet as honey in my mouth, but once I had swallowed it, my

stomach was embittered.¹¹ Then they said to me, You are to make a fresh prophecy concerning many peoples and races and nations and languages and kings.

Revelation 10:8-11 AMPC

Not only does the Word of God carry us through tribulations, sufferings and trials, but it also gives us fresh revelations to prophesy into the future (Revelation 10:8-11). Read Ezekiel, chapter 2. The Spirit entered Ezekiel and commanded him to go to the Nation of Israel and bring them the Word of the Lord, for they were rebellious.

*As for you, son of man, hear what I say to you; **be not rebellious like that rebellious house; open your mouth and eat what I give you.**⁹ And when I looked, behold, a hand was stretched out to me and behold, a scroll of a book was in it.¹⁰ And He spread it before me and it was written within and on the back, and written on it were words of lamentation and mourning and woe.*

Ezekiel 2:8-10 AMPC

The Word of God will break the bondage of rebellion in your life, and you will receive boldness from the Holy Spirit to share this word with the nations.

*He said to me, Son of man, eat what you find [in this book]; **eat this scroll**; then go and speak to the house of Israel.² So I opened my mouth, and He caused me to eat the scroll.³ And He said to me, Son of man, **eat this scroll that I give you and fill your stomach** with it. Then I ate it, and it was as **sweet as honey** in my mouth.⁴ And He*

*said to me, Son of man, go, get you to the house of Israel
and speak to them with My words. Ezekiel 3:1-4 AMPC*

**IN A BIBLICAL SENSE, "SWEET AS HONEY" REPRESENTS REVELATION
KNOWLEDGE!**

When we study the scriptures, we will find a word of **discernment** and will hate all that is unclean and evil.

*I refused to bend my morals when temptation was before
me so that I could become obedient to your Word.*

¹⁰² ***I refuse to turn away from difficult truths, for you
yourself have taught me to love your words.*** ¹⁰³ *How
sweet are your living promises to me; than honey is your
revelation-light. Psalm 119:101-103 TPT*

The Amplified Classic translated the phrase "I could become obedient to your Word" as "keep your word", explaining it in brackets as "**hearing, receiving, loving and obeying it**". This is exactly what our Messiah meant when he told the parable to His disciples in Luke 6:46. When the storm comes, only the house built by **hearing** and **doing** will last!

We need to love the Written Word of God as David did. He proclaimed in Psalm 119:72, "*The words you speak to me are worth more than all the riches and wealth in the whole world*", and also in verse 97, "*O how I love and treasure your law; throughout the day I fill my heart with its light!*" No treasure in this world can replace the sweet words of the Lord.

*The rarest treasures of life are found in his truth. That's
why God's Word is prized like others prize the finest gold.
Sweeter also than honey are his living words— sweet
words dripping from the honeycomb! Psalm 19:10 TPT*

Job had firsthand experience of the purification and sanctification of the Word of God in his life.

But He knows the way that I take [He has concern for it, appreciates, and pays attention to it]. When He has tried me, I shall come forth as refined gold [pure and luminous].

¹¹ My foot has held fast to His steps; His ways have I kept and not turned aside. ¹² I have not gone back from the commandment of His lips; I have esteemed and treasured the words of His mouth more than my necessary food. ¹³ But He is unchangeable, and who can turn Him? And what He wants to do, that He does.

Job 23:10-13 AMPC

What a testimony! He treasured the Word of God more than his daily food! How easily we get distracted by the flesh which constantly wars against the spirit. The moment we sit down to study the Word of God, the appetites of the flesh withhold us from doing so. As with Job, we, too, need an encounter with God to discover who He is.

Paul clarified that **"No one is empowered to lay an alternative foundation other than the good foundation that exists, which is Jesus Christ"** (1 Corinthians 3:11 TPT).

Jesus Christ, our Messiah, is the only foundation!

He is our personal foundation to be laid down before we can lay down the doctrinal foundation.

How to Build Upon This Foundation

A logical question is indeed, "How do I build on this foundation?" Yashuah explained it to His disciples in Luke 6.

*And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? ⁴⁷ Whosoever cometh to me, and **heareth my sayings, and doeth** them, I will shew you to whom he is like: ⁴⁸ He is like a man which built an house, **and digged deep**, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the **stream beat** vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock {Petra}. ⁴⁹ But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.*
Luke 6:46-49 KJV

In this parable are four Biblical principles that Yashuah laid down for us.

Hearing and doing.

Digging deep.

Building upon a rock – Petra.

The storm will surely hit!

Many believers hear, but few DO! Scripture guarantees the storm will come and only the houses of those who hear **and** do will last. If you do not DO what the Lord tells you in His scriptures, your house will eventually perish! Yashuah confirms that even if you hear and do, but your house is not built on this rock, Petra, the cliff, which is Yashuah HaMashiach, your house will collapse when the storm comes.

Take note that every house is subject to a test. The way into the Kingdom is through tests, trials, and persecutions, as Paul confirms.

*We point to you as an example of unwavering faith for all the churches of God. We boast about how you continue to **demonstrate unflinching endurance** through all the **persecutions and painful trials** you are experiencing.
⁵ All of this proves that God's judgment is always perfect and is intended to make you **worthy of inheriting the kingdom of God, which is why you are going through these troubles.** 2 Thessalonians 1:4-5 TPT*

The Thessalonians demonstrated endurance through all their trials and persecutions. They proved not only that they heard the Word of God but they also demonstrated it! "Doing" will make us worthy of inheriting the Kingdom of God.

No matter what your circumstances are, don't give up! Persevere to the end! It is all laid out for you to inherit the Kingdom. Glory to God! Hearing and doing are key. No wonder Paul explains that faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God (Romans 10:17).

Let us eat the scroll to overcome our sufferings and receive back our joy and peace. Let us devour the Word of God so we will be empowered to declare a fresh prophecy, as John did on the island of Patmos. Let the Word of God penetrate deeply into our innermost beings to deal with our rebellious spirits, so we will receive boldness to expose sin and love one another. His radiant light will expose all uncleanness, as explained by King David. It will quicken our spirits and bring us freedom, as experienced by Job. But only IF we treasure the Word of God more than our necessary food!

**The Word of God will bring Revelation Knowledge,
which will be like sweet honey in our mouths!**

The building is under construction, continually growing under Adonai's supervision, until it rises as His completed dwelling place.

You are rising like the perfectly fitted stones of the temple; and your lives have been built up together upon the foundation laid by the apostles and prophets, and best of all, you are connected to the Head Cornerstone of the building, the Anointed One, Jesus Christ himself! ²¹ This entire building is under construction and is continually growing under his supervision until it rises up completed as the holy temple of the Lord himself. ²² This means that God is transforming each one of you into the Holy of Holies, his dwelling place, through the power of the Holy Spirit living in you! Ephesians 2:20-22 TPT

WHO IS THIS MESSIAH?

Discovering prophecies and symbolisms in the Old Testament can be like an intricate game of "Where is Jesus?" The richness of God's Word is in the fact that it often reveals a deeper truth - if you know where to look! Jesus often pointed to the "beginning" (Genesis), the law of Moses (first five books of the Bible) and the prophets (Jeremiah to Malachi), to reveal God's plan for mankind, and thus gave us clues to recognise the Saviour. For the Jews of His time, understanding the Old Testament was key to discovering that Jesus was their promised Messiah. If you have heard the good news in the New Testament and received Jesus as your Saviour, Old Testament prophecies and symbolisms provide further proof and assurance that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of the living God.

As I meditated on this, the Holy Spirit revealed to me five ways to learn who our Messiah is.

- “Search for **My Names** in the scriptures.” God revealed Himself in many forms when He said, *“I am who I am and What I am, and I will be what I will be. This is My Name forever”* (Exodus 3:14-15).
- “Study the Word of God and **look for My Son, the Messiah**, in all the scriptures, both in the Old and in the New Testament.”
- “You will find me in **My Feasts**.”
The feasts of the Lord, which you shall proclaim to be holy convocations, these are My feasts. Leviticus 23:2
- “You will find me in **My Tabernacle**.”
But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. Hebrews 9:11-12 KJV
- “Study **My Attributes** and you will know Me better.”

My Names

“You will find My characteristics and attributes in My Names.” Most of us are familiar with the following names of Yehôvâh Elohim:

- Elohim – The Sovereign, Mighty Creator.
- Jehovah – The Unchangeable, intimate God.

- El Shaddai – The All-Sufficient One.
- Adonai – Lord and Master.
- Jehovah Jireh – The Lord my Provider.
- Jehovah M’Kaddesh – The Lord my Sanctifier.
- Jehovah Nissi – The Lord my Banner of Victory.
- Jehovah Rapha – The Lord my Health.
- Jehovah Shalom – The Lord my Peace and Wholeness.
- Jehovah Tsidkenu – The Lord my Righteousness.
- Jehovah Rohi – The Lord my Shepherd.
- Jehovah Shammah – God is there.
- El Elyon – God Most High.
- Jehovah Tsebaoth – The Lord of Hosts.
- Jehovah Makkeh – The Lord who Moulds me.
- Jehovah Gmolah – The Lord who Rewards.
- Jehovah Elohay – The Lord my God.
- El-Elohe-Israel – The Personal God of Israel.
- Jehovah Eloheenu – The Lord our God.

I invite you to search for many other names of God to discover yet hundreds of names to add to this list!

Seventy-two specific names of God are derived from Exodus 14:19-21, where we read about Israel standing at the Red Sea. According to Jewish tradition, Moses used these 72 names of the Lord to open the Red Sea so they could walk to the other side on dry land. These names of God are essentially one name comprising 216 letters. So, it is a name with 72 parts. The name is divided into triads, so every name comprises three letters. To create the first name, you combine the first letter of verse 14:19, the last letter of verse 14:20 and the first letter of verse 14:21. You can continue until all the letters in these verses have been used.

And the angel of God, who went before the camp of Israel, removed and went behind them; and the pillar of cloud removed from before them, and stood behind them; ²⁰ and it came between the camp of Egypt and the camp of Israel; and there was the cloud, and darkness here, yet gave it light by the night there; and the one came not near the other all the night. ²¹ And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and the Lord caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind all the night, and made the sea dry land, and the waters were divided. Exodus 14:19-21 KJV

I summarised the 72 names and meditated on some of them for several months. I even learned to write them in Hebrew. I can testify that this is indeed a deep level of knowing and experiencing Yehôvâh Elohim.

There is a lot of literature with text references to illustrate and discuss the meaning of His names. I seriously encourage studying these names to get a better understanding of who the Messiah is. The more we discover who He is, the more we can walk in faith and boldness to overcome trials and persecutions. Satan deceives us by distorting the picture of Yehôvâh Elohim. In this way, he steals, kills, and destroys our faith, leaving us in disbelief and doubt.

MY SON IN THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENTS

Another way to discover who Yehôvâh Elohim is, is to look for the Messiah in both the Old Testament and the New Testament. Marilyn Hickey wrote a book entitled "Seeing Jesus". She gives scripture references from Genesis to Revelation to reveal the Messiah in the scriptures. What an amazing experience to pursue the Messiah in each

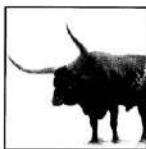
verse of the Bible. Look for Him, look for His attributes, and seek His character!

The following summary from her book may motivate you to read the Bible with more enthusiasm.

SEEING JESUS IN THE NEW TESTAMENT



MATTHEW:
KING



MARK:
SERVANT



LUKE:
SON OF MAN



JOHN:
SON OF GOD



ACTS:
TONGUES OF FIRE



ROMANS:
SALVATION



I CORINTHIANS:
SANCTIFIER



II CORINTHIANS:
APOSTLE



GALATIANS:
LIBERTY



EPHESIANS:
INHERITANCE



PHILIPPIANS:
CHRIST OUR PATTERN



COLOSSIANS:
HEAD OF THE BODY



I & II THESSALONIANS:
GLORY



I TIMOTHY:
COUNSELOR



II TIMOTHY:
TEACHER



TITUS:
PASTOR / SHEPHERD

SEEING JESUS IN THE NEW TESTAMENT (CONTINUED)



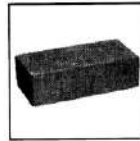
PHILEMON:
COMPASSIONATE FRIEND



HEBREWS:
MEDIATOR



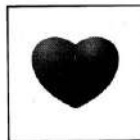
JAMES:
PERFECT GIFT



I PETER:
CORNERSTONE



II PETER:
THE WAY



I JOHN:
LOVE



II JOHN:
THE LIGHT



III JOHN:
PROSPERITY



JUDE:
GUIDE



REVELATION:
KING OF KINGS

SEEING JESUS IN THE OLD TESTAMENT



GENESIS:
THE SEED



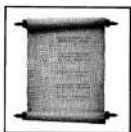
EXODUS:
PASSOVER LAMB



LEVITICUS:
THE HIGH PRIEST



NUMBERS:
PRESENCE OF GOD



DEUTERONOMY:
THE LAW



JOSHUA:
VICTORY



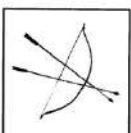
JUDGES:
RIGHTEOUS JUDGE



RUTH:
KINSMAN REDEEMER



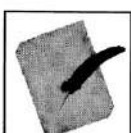
I SAMUEL:
THE PROPHET



II SAMUEL:
THE DELIVERER



KINGS & CHRONICLES:
RECORD BOOKS



EZRA:
FAITHFUL SCRIBE



NEHEMIAH:
RESTORER & REBUILDER



ESTHER:
INTERCESSOR



JOB:
REVELATION OF RIGHTEOUSNESS



PSALMS:
PRAISE

SEEING JESUS IN THE OLD TESTAMENT (CONTINUED)



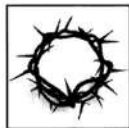
PROVERBS:
WISDOM



ECCLESIASTES:
PREACHER



SONG OF SOLOMON:
LOVER & BRIDEGROOM



ISAIAH:
STRICKEN MESSIAH



JEREMIAH:
COMPASSION



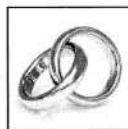
LAMENTATIONS:
FAITHFULNESS



EZEKIEL:
GOD ALMIGHTY



DANIEL:
FOURTH MAN IN THE FIRE



HOSEA:
FAITHFUL HUSBAND



JOEL:
RESTORATION



AMOS:
PLUMB LINE



OBADIAH:
DELIVERER/MOUNTAIN TOP



JONAH:
MESSENGER MISSIONARY



MICAH:
EVERLASTING RULER



NAHUM:
AVENGER



HABAKKUK:
VISION, HOPE



ZEPHANIAH:
SAVIOR



HAGGAI:
STRENGTH



ZECHARIAH:
FOUNTAIN OF CLEANSING



MALACHI:
HEALER

MY FEASTS

We find rich revelation knowledge by studying the feasts of the Lord. Many Bible scholars wrongly refer to these feasts as Jewish Feasts, but they are the Lord's Feasts.

*And the Lord spoke to Moses, saying, ² "Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: 'The feasts of the Lord, which you shall proclaim to be holy convocations, **these are My feasts.**' Leviticus 23:1-2 NKJV*

From these feasts, we get a better understanding of events in the Old Testament that foreshadowed future events the Messiah would come to fulfil.

A full discussion on the Names of the Lord, finding Yashuah in the Old Testament, and elaborating on these feasts, falls outside the scope of this teaching and I would encourage each reader to spend adequate time to discover and study them. Only basic information on the feasts will be provided here. Read Leviticus 23 to see what Adonai commanded Moses regarding these feasts.

Four of the seven feasts have already been fulfilled by Yashuah and the last three still need to be fulfilled. The Jews still commemorate all seven of these feasts today.

1. PASSOVER — LEVITICUS 23:4-8

This feast represents the last plague in Egypt when the angel of death "passed over" the children of Israel who applied the blood of the lamb to their doorposts. The Israelites took a bundle of hyssop and dipped it

into the blood in the basin at the threshold. They applied it first to the lintel, then onto the two sides of the frame (Exodus 12). Can you see the imagery? The movement from the bottom to get the hyssop to the top, then from side to side, formed a cross.

When John the Baptist said, "*Look! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!*" (John 1:29 NLT), he understood the Old Testament reference. In the New Testament, we see that Jesus, born in a stable, visited by shepherds and years later lead to the slaughter, is that Lamb sent for us. His death allows the judgment we deserve to pass over us. When we accept Christ, we accept the loving gift of a second chance. Because of His death on the cross, we receive a clean slate!

2. UNLEAVENED BREAD — LEVITICUS 23:6

This seven-day feast begins on the day following the start of Passover. In the haste of the Israelites to leave Egypt, there was no time to add leaven (yeast) to their bread and wait for it to rise. During this feast, the Jews eat nothing leavened. They remember the hardships in Egypt and how God freed them from captivity. In the Bible, leaven often represents sin and decay. Once incorporated, the yeast becomes an inseparable part of the bread. The same is true of sin's effect on our lives. The Jews were constantly sacrificing unblemished animals to atone for sin temporarily. Only the Messiah, the perfect sinless sacrifice, could offer a permanent solution.

The unleavened bread represents Jesus' sinless life. He is the only perfect sacrifice for our sins. In John 6:35, Jesus boldly states that He is the Bread of Life. Not only does He remove our sins, but He also nourishes our souls!

3. FIRST FRUITS — LEVITICUS 23:10

The Feast of First Fruits is one of three Jewish harvest feasts to thank and honour God for all He provides. Although they didn't know it then, the children of Israel were celebrating what would become a very important day.

The priests sacrificed Passover lambs on the 14th day of the month of Nisan. The first day of Passover was the 15th. The Feast of First Fruits was celebrated on the third day, the 16th of Nisan. This "third-day" celebration was the same day Jesus was resurrected from the dead. In 1 Corinthians 15:20, Paul refers to Jesus as the First Fruits of the dead. He represents the first of the great harvest of souls, including you and me! We will be resurrected to eternal life because of the new covenant in His Blood (Luke 22:20).

4. FEAST OF WEEKS OR PENTECOST — LEVITICUS 23:16

This feast is the second of the three harvest feasts. It occurs exactly seven weeks after the Feast of First Fruits. It is also called Pentecost, which means "50 days". Traditionally, people were expected to bring the first harvest of grain to the Lord, including two leavened loaves of bread.

God's plan for saving souls included more than the Jews. Through Jesus, this plan was revealed. In Matthew 9:37, Jesus tells his disciples that "*the harvest is great, but the workers are few.*" Then He put the plan into place. In Acts 1:4, He tells them to wait in Jerusalem for the Holy Spirit. The day the Holy Spirit arrived (Pentecost) was the day the church was born! The harvest began with 3 000 souls. The message spread to both Jews and Gentiles (the two leavened loaves of bread), extending the harvest to us!

5. FEAST OF TRUMPETS — LEVITICUS 23:24

In a beautiful declaration, God commanded His people to rest. All regular work was prohibited and they presented a food offering to God. In Leviticus 23:24, God commanded His people to gather and commemorate the decree with trumpet blasts. On the same front, the sound of a trumpet is associated with the rapture, or the return of Jesus for His Bride (1 Corinthians 15:52). Once He returns, there will be a wedding feast of celebration. Revelation 19:9 NLT says, *"Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding feast of the lamb."* He is preparing us for the celebration!

Many Bible scholars believe the Messiah will come for His Bride on the Feast of Trumpets.

6. DAY OF ATONEMENT — LEVITICUS 16, 23:26-32

To make "atonement" is to make restitution for wrongs committed. As a day of humility and repentance to God, it was a time for the Jews to get their hearts, consciences, and lives right before him. The observance involved the sacrifice of animals as the high priest entered the Holy of Holies. This act was merely an annual payment for their sins. However, hiding in plain sight, was the promise of One who would atone for their sins permanently (Hebrews 9:12).

Where is Jesus in this sacrifice of animals? A bull and one of two goats were an offering of thanks, but the "scapegoat" took on their sins (Leviticus 16:10). The scapegoat was to be burdened with all the sins of Israel and sent into the wilderness. The Jewish leaders condemned Jesus, and He, burdened with the sins of all mankind, was led out of the city to be crucified.

He himself is the sacrifice that atones for our sins — and not only our sins but the sins of the world. 1 John 2:2 NLT

The necessity of the Day of Atonement was rendered void by Jesus' death on the cross. Our debt has been paid!

After the Bride of Christ has been raptured ("*harpazo*"), the Messiah will return to make **final atonement** for the nation of Israel. Currently, they are still awaiting the coming of their Messiah.

7. FEAST OF TABERNACLES OR BOOTHS — LEVITICUS 23:34

Celebration always follows the Day of Atonement. The Feast of Tabernacles celebrates God's provision and protection for the people of Israel during their 40 years of wandering in the wilderness. For the duration of the seven days of the feast, people live in temporary structures as they did in the wilderness. The Lord was with the Israelites in a tented temple called the Tabernacle. The feast also celebrates His presence as He tabernacles (dwells) with us.

What a prospect to know that when Christ returns with His Bride to rule and reign on earth for a thousand years, this Feast of Tabernacles will take place on earth and Christ will be with us during this Millennium Reign!

And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. Revelation 21:3 KJV

Jesus is called Emmanuel, meaning "God is with us" (Matthew 1:23, NLT). He put on a temporary tabernacle, a human body, to dwell on this earth and offer Himself as a sacrifice.

This feast also points to the promise that God will return and rally with His people in the person of Jesus. He promised there would be no more death and suffering and He would wipe away every tear from our eyes (Revelation 21:4). His return is the ultimate answer to the hope we've been carrying our entire lives. What a day that will be!

As we study these feasts of Adonai, we can pray for God's wisdom to see the Messiah. Even with this small glimpse into these feasts, we see that His intentional love for humanity has endured for centuries. He has left us clues that foreshadow the beauty that is to come. The Old Testament has many hidden truths that, considering the New Testament, bring a richer understanding of our lives in Jesus Christ

MY TABERNACLE

There are endless Biblical truths to be discovered in the Tabernacle of Yehôvâh Elohim. Commit yourself to making an in-depth study of the Tabernacle of God in your own time, and in the process, look for Jesus! God's nature is to hide! He is hiding from us, His kings, and we must search for Him!

It is the glory of God to conceal things, but the glory of kings is to search things out. Proverbs 25:2 ESV

What a revelation that God **tabernacles with human beings**, as written by John in Revelation 21:3. The last feast, the Feast of

Tabernacles, **will be fulfilled when Christ tabernacles with His people on earth during the Millennium Reign.**

God commanded Moses on Mount Sinai to build Him a dwelling place on earth, according to the pattern in heaven which God had shown him.

And see to it that you make them according to the pattern which was shown you on the mountain.

Exodus 25:40 NKJV

Who serve the copy and shadow of the heavenly things, as Moses was divinely instructed when he was about to make the tabernacle. For He said, "See that you make all things according to the pattern shown you on the mountain.

Hebrews 8:5 NKJV

God required the Tabernacle to be built as the place of communication, the "place of intimacy" - God's dwelling place!

It is important to know that there was a protocol to be followed for entering the Tabernacle. A protocol is an official system of rules that should be followed. Not just anybody could enter the Tabernacle, neither the Holy Place nor certainly the Holy of Holies. This will be explained as you read on.

Everything in the Old Testament is concealed and then revealed in the New Testament. Everything in the Old Testament is a foreshadowing of better things still to come in the New Testament. So, let us not embrace the shadow of things but the true One - the Messiah who is now the substance of the types and shadows. He is the true Tabernacle, as we now have a better covenant, instituted before His death, burial, and resurrection.

The Tabernacle is the "Masterpiece" of all shadows or types hidden in the Bible. If the shadow contained so much power, how much more would the substance!

If we want to receive the fullness of His power in our lives, we need to make ready to ENTER! Let us define what it means to enter.

BUILD ME A SANCTUARY – A DWELLING PLACE

When God told Moses to build Him a sanctuary, it implied that He would dwell among us, and no one would have to go up to Him in future!

And let them make me a sanctuary; that I may dwell among them.⁹ According to all that I shew thee, after the pattern of the tabernacle, and the pattern of all the instruments thereof, even so shall ye make it.

Exodus 25:8- 9 KJV

God is a God of detail. He gave Moses all the details of the Tabernacle that shadowed and hid His Son, Christ Jesus. What a mighty GOD we serve!

The elements in the Tabernacle point to:

- The Four Gospels in the New Testament.
- The end of the world when GOD will dwell among His people.

Read Exodus 25 to see how God specifically instructed Moses and the people to bring offerings of gold, silver and brass, fine linen, goat skins, oil, spices and sweet incense, various stones, and much more for the making of the Tabernacle.

The free metals God commanded them to use, each has a divine meaning:

- Gold - Divinity
- Silver - Redemption
- Brass - Suffering

God required specific colours that represent the following:

- Blue - Son of God (Book of John, the Eagle)
- Purple - King of Glory (Book of Matthew, King, Lion of Judah)
- Scarlet - Suffering (Book of Luke, Our Saviour)

More representations were:

- Fine Linen - Perfect Man [robes of righteousness] (Book of Mark, the Ox)
- Goat's Hair - the Prophets

Notice the precise sequence in which God ordered the following:

- Ram's skins – A symbol of Christ (Genesis 22).
- Dyed Red – The Son of God died on Calvary.
- Badgers' skins – He was bruised for our iniquities. He was not even recognisable as a human being after the crucifixion.
- Shittim wood [A family of very durable Acacia wood called Iron Wood] - The Body of Christ saw no corruption. This points to His resurrection.
- Oil for light - After the resurrection, the outpouring of the Holy Spirit followed.

God then gave precise instructions for the building of the Ark of the Covenant in various verses in Exodus 25.

¹⁰ Make an ark of shittim wood... ¹¹ overlay it with pure gold and... make upon it a crown of gold.

¹⁶ ...put into the ark the testimony which I shall give thee

¹⁷ And thou shalt make a mercy seat of pure gold... ¹⁸ And thou shalt make two cherubims of gold, of beaten work shalt thou make them...

²¹ ...Put the mercy seat above upon the ark and in the ark thou shalt put the testimony that I shall give thee. ²² And there I will meet with thee, and I will commune with thee from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubims which are upon the ark of the testimony, of all things which I will give in commandment unto the children of Israel.

Right here is the answer to the question, "Where can I meet God and communicate with Him?"

ENTER HIS DWELLING PLACE!

If you experience problems hearing God's voice or communicating with Him, you may be visiting the wrong place!

"I will commune with thee from above the mercy seat ..."

God has a specific protocol for entering the Tabernacle, His dwelling place! Breaking this protocol has consequences, as we can see in the following incident. The Israelites suffered a significant defeat at Eben-Ezer. Hophni and Phinehas, sons of the high priest, Eli, were killed, and the Ark was captured by the Philistines. When they disrespectfully opened the lid to look inside the Ark of the Lord, the Lord smote 50 000 with death.

And he smote the men of Bethshemesh, because they had looked into the ark of the LORD, even he smote of the people fifty thousand and threescore and ten men: and the people lamented, because the LORD had smitten many of the people with a great slaughter. 1 Samuel 6:19 KJV

We must follow God's protocol to meet Him at the Mercy Seat, which is His seat and dwelling place where He communicates with His people.

What protocol was broken by the Philistines?

When you remove the Mercy Seat, you remove the covering of the Blood of Christ and expose yourself to the law by rejecting the work of Jesus on the Cross. This has devastating consequences!

You will stare death in the eye!

Studying the various elements in the different areas of the Tabernacle gives us the true meaning of each and reveals the protocol that we must follow to meet our Lord in the Holy of Holies.

The Tabernacle consisted of three areas:

- The Holy of Holies
- The Holy Place
- The Outer Court

HOLY OF HOLIES

God ordained Moses to put the Ark of the Covenant behind a veil in the Holy of Holies. The veil separated the Holy of Holies from the Holy Place.

HOLY PLACE

In front of the veil, inside the Holy Place, was the Golden Altar of Incense. Also, in the Holy Place were:

- On the right - the Table of Shewbread.
- On the left - the Golden Candlestick or the Lampstand (also known as the Menorah).
- The entrance into the Holy Place was the door with five pillars.

OUTER COURT

Outside the Holy Place, in front of the five pillars, was the Outer Court with the following items:

- Brazen Laver ["waskom"], a round bowl with water for washing.
- Brazen Altar - for the sacrifices of animals.

Let us look into the details of the various items in the different areas.

1. INSIDE THE HOLY OF HOLIES

THE ARK OF THE COVENANT

The Ark of the Covenant was inside the Holy of Holies. It was made of shittim wood, also known as ironwood, which is a very durable, long-lasting wood.

It speaks of the Father's promise to His Son that He would not abandon Him to the realm of death, nor allow Him to experience corruption (Psalm 16:10). Therefore, the Messiah had to trust His Father not to

leave Him in Hades, but to resurrect Him from the dead. This is a promise that we, too, will be resurrected from the dead!

The Ark of the Covenant was covered with gold, which speaks of divinity. Wood speaks of humanity - Jesus as pure human, the body in the flesh. Gold speaks of deity - the perfect man and perfect God. In the wood (Gospel of Luke), we see Jesus as the perfect man, the Son of Man. In the gold (Gospel of John), we see Him as the perfect man, the Son of God. He was fully God.

The Ark of the Covenant inside the Most Holy Place represents the Nucleolus, which is found inside the nucleus of cells - the round purple area in our generic cell diagram. What a discovery that the Lord put His Holy of Holies within our DNA structure!

This entire building is under construction and is continually growing under his supervision until it rises up completed as the holy temple of the Lord himself. ²² This means that God is transforming each one of you into the Holy of Holies, his dwelling place, through the power of the Holy Spirit living in you! Ephesians 2:21-22 TPT

Within the Ark of the Covenant, we find the following items:

- Two sets of Tables of the Testimony, which are the Ten Commandments written in stone.
- The Golden Pot of Manna.
- Aaron's rod.

Moses came down from the mountain with the two stones of testimony. When he saw the people worshipping the golden calf they had made, **he executed a prophetic action by breaking the stones. This declared that Israel was not ready and able to fulfil the law.**

Moses had to go back up the mountain to receive a second set of commandments from God. This time, God told him to not show it to the people but to put it inside the Ark of the Covenant. By this act, God declared, ***“I will send my SON to fulfil it on behalf of my people.”***

Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them. Matthew 5:17 NIV

For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone who believes. Romans 10:4 KJV

Christ is the end of the law, and because of Him, God has transferred His perfect righteousness to all who believe, says the Passion Translation (Romans 10:4). The law has not been fulfilled by Israel but by Christ Jesus, the Anointed One.

GOLDEN POT WITH MANNA

The Golden Pot with Manna speaks of the Bread of Life. What an amazing word in the Gospel of John when Yashuah declares He is the “Bread of Life”. Please make a study of John 6!

AARON'S ROD

The rod of Aaron budded inside the Ark of the Covenant. This speaks of resurrection.

And the LORD said unto Moses, Bring Aaron's rod again before the testimony, to be kept for a token against the

rebels; and thou shalt quite take away their murmurings from me, that they die not. Numbers 17:10 KJV

Jesus, our Mediator who rose from the dead, is revealed in the Ark of the Covenant.

THE MERCY SEAT

The Mercy Seat was made of pure gold with no wood in it. It had to be made as one solid piece.

- In the Ark, we see the person of Jesus.
- In the Mercy Seat, we see the purpose of Jesus.

The crown of the Mercy Seat was made of one solid piece of pure gold (no wood), covered by two cherubim. It was put on top of the ark as a lid. From above the Mercy Seat between the two cherubim, which are the guardians of God's glory, God meets and communes with us.

And thou shalt put the mercy seat above upon the ark; and in the ark thou shalt put the testimony that I shall give thee. ²² And there I will meet with thee, and I will commune with thee from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubims which are upon the ark of the testimony, of all things which I will give thee in commandment unto the children of Israel. Exodus 25:21-22 KJV

Here we see the cherubim guarding over the work of Calvary. They protected our salvation in the Garden of Eden as they protected the Tree of Life after the fall. Had Adam and Eve eaten from the Tree of Life in their sinful state, we would have been condemned with no chance of REDEMPTION. Adam would have lived forever as a sinner, but now,

through the redemption work of Christ, we can live forever as redeemed believers!

And when Moses was gone into the tabernacle of the congregation to speak with him, then he heard the voice of one speaking unto him from off the mercy seat that was upon the ark of testimony, from between the two cherubims: and he spake unto him. Numbers 7:89 KJV

It is very important to note that the voice of God came through the Blood. Thus, this time the Blood speaks better things than the blood of Abel. The Blood of Christ speaks mercy and forgiveness, in contrast with the blood of Abel which cried out for justice and righteousness.

The crown, a border around the Mercy Seat, speaks of the authority of the Messiah and His deity, and the gold with which it was made speaks of divinity. The crown holds us securely in His authority. God looks down and sees the Blood and has therefore no case against those who believe! Isn't this wonderful!

2. INSIDE THE HOLY PLACE

In the Holy Place, we find three items:

- The Table of Shewbread.
- The Candlestick, or the Lampstand, also known as the Menorah.
- The Altar of Incense, filled with spices.

SHEWBREAD

There were 12 loaves of bread on the Table of Shewbread, which point to the 12 tribes and the 12 apostles, which in turn represent the church.

- Only the priests could partake of the bread.
- Today, we are His kings and priests and therefore we partake of the bread.
- The bread speaks of Christ, who is Life and Power.
- The Son of God is the substance we are feeding on.
- He is the manna on which the angels feed. Manna refers to angel's food.

And had rained down manna upon them to eat, and had given them of the corn of heaven. ²⁵ Man did eat angels' food. Psalm 78:24-25 KJV

In John 6:35, Jesus introduces Himself as the Bread of Life, which He is indeed!

THE CANDLESTICK – MENORAH

This was also made of one solid piece of pure gold.

- It consisted of one stem with six branches, representing the church.
- The seven candlesticks (one stem plus six branches) point to the seven churches of Revelation and the seven stages of the church age, which will end at the church of Laodicea.
- In Revelation, Jesus stood amid the seven churches with a message that those who overcome would be rewarded.

It also speaks of the seven Spirits of Isaiah 11, which the Lord outpours on His saints to prepare them for full salvation.

And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and

might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD;

Isaiah 11:2 KJV

The Menorah is not merely a candlestick, but a lampstand in which the oil of the Holy Spirit flows!

*And I answered again, and said unto him, What be these two olive branches which through the **two golden pipes empty the golden oil out of themselves?** ¹³ And he answered me and said, Knowest thou not what these be? And I said, No, my lord. ¹⁴ Then said he, These are the two anointed ones, that stand by the Lord of the whole earth.*

Zechariah 4:12-14 KJV

This scripture speaks of the fullness of the Anointing Spirit upon Christ and His Body.

- We experience Him first as the BREAD and then as the LIGHT.
- When we become one with Him, we experience John 6 - communion and union in Him.
- When we have daily communion with Him, we will never experience sickness again.
- He illuminates our minds.
- We get the mind of Christ and start thinking like Him.
- Then, we move into intercession as we cry out, "**Abba, Father!**" That is to cry out, "Daddy!"

For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. Romans 8:15 KJV

And you did not receive the "spirit of religious duty," leading you back into the fear of never being good enough.

But you have received the "Spirit of full acceptance," enfolding you into the family of God. And you will never feel orphaned, for as he rises up within us, our spirits join him in saying the words of tender affection, "beloved Father!" Romans 8:15 TPT

Now we can experience a glorious and resurrected life! We now walk in pure righteousness and the people can see it!

OIL AND SPICES

- In the parable of the virgins, ALL 10 virgins were asleep and ALL had oil. ALL of them were awakened, but only half of them had **sufficient** oil (Matthew 25). Do you have sufficient oil?
- There comes a time when an inexhaustible source of oil will flow from two golden pipes.
- I believe this source of oil will be poured out on the Bride.

And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

Revelation 22:17 KJV

There were 11 spices on the Altar of Incense. Spices represent our prayer life. When the spices are mixed, they release an aroma acceptable to the Lord and open the door into the Holy of Holies.

The Password

Do you desire to know the password to enter?

You can pass through his open gates with the password of praise. Come right into his presence with thanksgiving. Come bring your thank offering to him and affectionately bless his beautiful name! Psalm 100:4 TPT

Each step is a step higher and closer to YHWH! But there is a protocol to be followed! It is impossible to simply walk into His presence.

3. INSIDE THE OUTER COURTS

The Altar

This was the Altar of the Red Heifer, which speaks of initial salvation. Gentiles couldn't enter the outer courts, meaning that sinners could not enter. It also points to Christ who died outside of the city (Hebrews 13:12-14). Your ticket to enter is outside the Tabernacle (Hebrews 9:11-15). Entering through the door of the Tabernacle points to Jesus.

I am the DOOR, the WAY and the TRUTH. John 14:6

How blind the religious people were! They were familiar with this concept, yet, when the Door arrived, they did not enter through Him and missed their salvation!

- On entering through the gate, you could smell incense and spices burning on the altar. The smell of myrrh and frankincense was remarkable.
- It is a picture of entering the presence of the Lord, leaving behind all your sins to move into the safety and security of the Ark where you become His servant.
- It speaks of a life transformed into maturity and thus approaching the HEAVENLY JERUSALEM!

*And behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according to his works. ¹³ I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. ¹⁴ Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and **may enter in through the gates into the city.** ¹⁵ But outside are the dogs, and the sorcerers, and the fornicators, and the murderers, and the idolaters, and everyone who loves and makes a lie. Revelation 22:12-15 KJV*

Sinners and the unsaved will NOT ENTER THE TABERNACLE. Outside the gates are the sorcerers and the fornicators, murderers, and idolaters – those who love the lie more than the truth.

Once you are inside and have accepted the offering, it is not necessary to ever start over again. It is the BLOOD of the ONE SACRIFICE that completed it once and for all!

*By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. ¹¹ And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: ¹² **But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;** ¹³ From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. ¹⁴ For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. ¹⁵ Whereof the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before, ¹⁶ This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; ¹⁷ **And their sins and***

iniquities will I remember no more. ¹⁸ *Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.*

Hebrews 10:10-18 KJV

Though sin continues, we do not have to make sacrifices anymore. In faith, we abide by the completed work of the Cross!

THE BRONZE LAVER

The Bronze Laver was a round bowl filled with water.

- The purpose was the washing of the hands and feet of those involved in the sacrifices of the animals.
- This is a picture of our **water baptism**. It represents dying in the water and coming out of the water into resurrection life.
- It is a picture of being cleansed and sanctified to appear before the King.
- It also points to our washing by the Word of God.

That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word. Ephesians 5:26 KJV

If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. ³⁸ *He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.* John 7:37b-38 KJV

Here is some interesting information about the outside poles of the Tabernacle which upheld the outside fence.

- There were 60 (10x6) pillars upholding the fence of fine white material.
- The number 6 always refers to MAN.
- The number 10 refers to responsibility.

Man is born from a sinful nature and therefore cannot fulfil his own responsibilities. **So, Jesus came to fulfil our responsibility!**

Notice that Adonai knew this since the beginning, and it was no coincidence that Moses executed a prophetic act when he threw down the Ten Commandments crafted in stone, indicating that man cannot fulfil the law. When Moses came down the second time with the second set of the Ten Commandments, Adonai told him to not show it to the people but to put it in the Ark of the Covenant, which was a declaration that, **"I, your Lord, will fulfil it for you!"**

All pillars were to be made from shittim wood, referring to the corruptible flesh and the perfection of the Body of Christ. The cup of each pillar was to be made of silver and the bottom of brass. Silver speaks of redemption and brass of suffering.

Each pillar was held down to the ground by a rope made of goat's hair and a nail halfway in and halfway out into the ground.

- Goat's hair, in Leviticus 9:3, refers to the SIN OFFERING.
- The nails, halfway in and halfway out, speak of the death and resurrection of Christ!

Christ presented Himself to man in all these elements of His dwelling place, the Ark of the Covenant, yet they rejected Him!

He was the fulfilment of the shadow of all things, but they could not grasp it and rejected their Messiah!

Let's summarise the rich truths captured in the Tabernacle in reverse order and review the protocol we need to follow to enter the Holy of Holies.

The Outer Court

THE GATE - RECONCILED

To enter the Tabernacle, God's dwelling place, we must enter through the GATE.

- Jesus is the ONLY Gate.
- Without Jesus, there is no hope, salvation, and eternal life.
- *I am the WAY, the TRUTH, and LIFE. No man cometh unto the Father, but by ME.* John 14:6

THE ALTAR OF SACRIFICE - REDEEMED

The sacrifice of animals was for the remission of sin.

- *And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins.*
Hebrews 10:11 KJV
- But the power of the Blood of Christ, One Man, One Offering, One Sacrifice for sins, sanctified us ONCE FOR ALL.

But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God.

Hebrews 10:12 KJV

THE GOLDEN LAVER - SANCTIFIED

Only after our born-again experience and baptism can we move on to the golden laver. This is the place of washing by the Word of God.

That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word. Ephesians 5:26 KJV

Many are still at the gate! They have entered but have never passed through the water to be raised as a new creation. This is what Jesus meant in John 3.

“Nicodemus, how is this that you do not know what it means to be born again?”

Except a man be born again, he cannot SEE the kingdom of God. John 3:3 KJV

“Nicodemus, how is this that you do not know what it means to be born again?”

Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot ENTER into the kingdom of God. John 3:5 KJV

The following important scriptures should become part of your life.

- Born of water - John 3:5
- The crucified flesh - Galatians 5:24
- Dying daily - 1 Corinthians 15:31
- Walk in the Spirit - Galatians 5:16

*Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not **inherit** the kingdom of God? 1 Corinthians 6:9 KJV*

Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. Galatians 5:21 KJV

If you have not yet crucified the flesh, you will not and cannot enter the Holy of Holies.

- Once you have passed the altar of sacrifice, you only need to wash your feet.
- Why? Because we are already washed by the blood of the lamb.
- We are still living in a contaminated world and need daily cleansing by the Word of God.
- The priests only washed their HANDS and FEET at the golden laver. Hands speak of works and feet of our ways or paths of walking.

The laver contained pieces of mirror.

- The Word is a mirror to see who we are in Christ. James 1:23-24 gives us a picture of ourselves in the mirror and there we also discover how Christ sees us.
- We need to change from the inside to the outside.
- For the believer, seeing the man "in the mirror" is seeing how God has been seeing us from the beginning, even before the fall of Adam which resulted in sin's devastation to human hearts. The man in the mirror is the new creation man.

The Outer Court represents our human bodies. This is our place of struggle, repetition, and guilt.

- Once death of the flesh comes, guilt will leave.
- Once guilt leaves, our will changes from the inside.
- Our prayer life will change, and we will pray according to the Word of God.
- We need to confess who Yehôvâh Elohim is, as Peter did. He received a revelation of who Christ was after he was confronted and then he boldly and openly confessed.
- Our prayer lives will become a living word.

- It is the Word of God that will convert our souls.

Here are seven steps of prayer to follow to enrich your prayer life.

- Confession
- Supplication
- Adoration
- Intimacy
- Intercession
- Thanksgiving

The Holy Place

In the Holy Place, the following elements are present:

- The Shewbread, which speaks of our **Satisfaction**.
- The Lampstand, which speaks of the **Revelation** we receive.
- The Altar of Incense, which speaks of **Exaltation**.

The entrance into the Holy Place had five pillars, representing the five offices of the church, also known as the five-fold ministries. Ephesians 4:11-13 lists these offices of the five-fold ministries, namely Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Teachers, and Pastors. The Passion Bible refers to these as the grace ministries. What is the purpose of these grace ministries?

Their calling is to nurture and prepare all the holy believers to do their own works of ministry and as they do this they will enlarge and build up the body of Christ.

Ephesians 4:12 TPT

In contrast with this scripture, the institutional church instead does the opposite. Their self-appointed pastors claim they are the only spiritual

leaders, thus overlooking God's grace ministries and neglecting to equip the Body of Christ. No wonder the building rarely extends.

The Holy of Holies

This is where the Ark of the Covenant stood behind the veil. This is the place of **glorification, where we touch Him!** David's soul thirsted for his God and his flesh longed for Adonai. He saw his God in the sanctuary. Thus, he wrote Psalm 63 and declared how his soul was satisfied.

My Soul Thirsts for You

A Psalm of David, when he was in the wilderness of Judah.
O God, thou art my God; early will I seek thee: my soul
thirsteth for thee, my flesh longeth for thee in a dry and
*thirsty land, where no water is; ² **To see thy power and***
***thy glory, so as I have seen thee in the sanctuary.** ³*
Because thy lovingkindness is better than life, my lips shall
praise thee. ⁴ Thus will I bless thee while I live: I will lift
*up my hands in thy name. ⁵ **My soul shall be satisfied***
as with marrow and fatness; and my mouth shall
***praise thee with joyful lips:** ⁶ When I remember thee*
upon my bed, and meditate on thee in the night watches.
⁷ Because thou hast been my help, therefore in the shadow
of thy wings will I rejoice. ⁸ My soul followeth hard after
thee: thy right hand upholdeth me. ⁹ But those that seek
my soul, to destroy it, shall go into the lower parts of the
earth. ¹⁰ They shall fall by the sword: they shall be a
portion for foxes. ¹¹ But the king shall rejoice in God; every

one that sweareth by him shall glory: but the mouth of them that speak lies shall be stopped. Psalm 63:1-11 KJV

Because of the Word of God that washes and cleanses us and because of the illuminated lampstands:

- Revelation is now ours.
- The word now produces revelation knowledge.
- The oil that causes it to shine (the Holy Spirit) brings revelation.
- God talks/communicates with us.

The Shewbread, accompanied by revelation, produced satisfaction and David cried out that his soul was satisfied! BUT there is a price to be paid! Persecution will follow once we reach this stage of our spiritual lives. Therefore, the shewbread was covered by frankincense which released a sweet smell yet was bitter to the taste.

If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

1 Peter 4:14 KJV

In Acts, the Holy Ghost came upon the disciples and they received power, which came only after they had experienced persecution.

But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: Acts 1:8a KJV

During persecution, we enter into worship. This is why we come to the table of incense before entering the Holy of Holies. The table of incense, containing 11 spices, is pointing us to worship.

The revelation at the Lampstand leads us to **satisfaction** at the Table of Shewbread, which leads us to the wonderful place of **worship**. This

again leads to **persecution** and the bitter taste of frankincense. **Only then will we be ready to enter the Holy of Holies!**

O sing unto the LORD a new song: sing unto the LORD, all the earth. ² Sing unto the LORD, bless his name; shew forth his salvation from day to day. ³ Declare his glory among the heathen, his wonders among all people. ⁴ For the LORD is great, and greatly to be praised: he is to be feared above all gods. ⁹ O worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness: fear before him, all the earth. ¹¹ Let the heavens rejoice, and let the earth be glad; let the sea roar, and the fulness thereof. ¹² Let the field be joyful, and all that is therein: then shall all the trees of the wood rejoice ¹³ Before the LORD: for he cometh, for he cometh to judge the earth: he shall judge the world with righteousness, and the people with his truth. Psalm 96:1-13 KJV

My Refuge and Fortress

He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. ² I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. ³ Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. Psalm 91:1-3 KJV

There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. ¹¹ For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. Psalm 91:10-11 KJV

With my soul have I desired thee in the night; yea, with my spirit within me will I seek thee early: for when thy judgments are in the earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness. Isaiah 26:9 KJV

BE STILL AND KNOW THAT I AM GOD.

Psalm 46:10 KJV

New International Version

He says, "Be still, and know that I am God; I will be exalted among the nations, I will be exalted in the earth.

New American Standard Bible

Cease striving and know that I am God; I will be exalted among the nations, I will be exalted in the earth.

King James Bible

Be still, and know that I am God: I will be exalted among the heathen, I will be exalted in the earth.

Christian Standard Bible

Stop your fighting, and know that I am God, exalted among the nations, exalted on the earth.

Contemporary English Version

Our God says, "Calm down, and learn that I am God! All nations on earth will honor me.

Let's review the protocol we must follow to touch Him!

- ♣ **AT THE GATE, WE ARE RECONCILED.**
- ♣ **AT THE ALTAR, WE ARE REDEEMED.**
- ♣ **AT THE GOLDEN LAVER, WE ARE SANCTIFIED.**
- ♣ **AT THE LAMPSTAND, WE ARE ILLUMINATED.**
- ♣ **AT THE SHEWBREAD, WE ARE SATISFIED.**
- ♣ **AT THE TABLE OF INCENSE, WE EXALT HIM.**
- ♣ **IN THE HOLY OF HOLIES, WE TOUCH HIM!**

When we touch Him in the Holy of Holies, “deep calleth unto deep”.

Deep calleth unto deep at the noise of thy waterspouts: all thy waves and thy billows are gone over me.
Psalm 42:7 KJV

My deep need calls out to the deep kindness of your love. Your waterfall of weeping sent waves of sorrow over my soul, carrying me away, cascading over me like a thundering cataract. ⁸ Yet all day long God’s promises of love pour over me. Through the night I sing his songs, for my prayer to God has become my life. Psalm 42:7-8 TPT

I cried unto thee, O LORD: I said, Thou art my refuge and my portion in the land of the living. ⁶ Attend unto my cry; for I am brought very low: deliver me from my persecutors; for they are stronger than I. ⁷ Bring my soul out of prison, that I may praise thy name: the righteous shall compass me about; for thou shalt deal bountifully with me. Psalm 142:5-7 KJV

THE APPLE OF MY EYE

The Holy of Holies is where we become the ***apple of His eye!***

Keep me as the apple of the eye, hide me under the shadow of thy wings. Psalm 17:8 KJV

For he that toucheth you toucheth the apple of his eye.

Zachariah 2:8b KJV

As Moses had to grow into a relationship with Adonai, so we need to follow God's protocol to meet Him face to face.

- At the burning bush (Exodus 3:1-17), God told Moses to come closer. Had Moses not gone closer and looked, he would have missed both his calling and intimacy with his beloved Father.
- In Exodus 33:17-23, Moses only saw the back of God, BUT...
- In Exodus 33:11, Moses spoke face to face with the Father!

Likewise, we first must enter through the Gate into the Outer Court.

- This is our born-again experience, before...
- ...we can enter as a priest and a king into the Holy Place, the place of service!
- Only His beloved high priest could enter the Holy of Holies, which speaks of God requiring of us a deep and intimate relationship with Him before we can enter His ultimate presence!

Are you willing to pay the price?

The personal foundation, which is Yashuah HaMashiach, is fundamental in laying down the foundation. He is the Cornerstone and any misrepresentation of who He is will most definitely cause the house to

collapse when the storm comes. The enemy will constantly mislead us into believing that God is responsible for our miserable lives.

The better we know our Beloved Father, the stronger the foundation sustaining the house when the storm comes.

Remember, we can know Him by:

- Studying His **Names** in the Scriptures.
- Studying the Word of God and **looking for the Messiah** in all the scriptures, both in the Old and in the New Testament.
- Studying His **Feasts**.
- Studying His **Tabernacle**, which is His dwelling place.
- Studying His **Attributes**.

Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, and today, and forever (Hebrews 13:8 KJV). He is the same today as He was in the Old Testament! Let us now look at a few of Adonai's attributes.

MY ATTRIBUTES

We often devalue God's character because of our customs and traditions. His true, unchangeable Godly character should become part of who we are, so He can be revealed to others through our lives. By looking at Biblical truths, this book will help us understand God's character in and through our Lord Jesus and carry His attributes in our own lives and present them to this world. May Adonai flood your heart and mind with the revelation of His attributes as you read, study, and meditate on His Word.

We will discuss the following four common attributes of Adonai.

- Omnipotence

- Omnipresence
- Omniscience
- Omnibenevolence

1. GOD'S OMNIPOTENCE

The word "omnipotent" is derived from the Latin word "**Omni**", which means "all", and "**potent**," which means "power". Omnipotence means to be all-powerful, almighty, and having unlimited power. Adonai has supreme power. This means that He can do whatever He wants to. He is not subject to physical limitations, as man is. Adonai has power over wind, water, gravity, physics, etc. His power is infinite, or limitless. **Our God is an Omnipotent God!** His power is immeasurable, unimaginable, and unlimited. This means God is the greatest of the great!

For God will never give you the spirit of fear, but the Holy Spirit who gives you mighty power, love, and self-control.

2 Timothy 1:7 TPT

According to the Strong's Dictionary, "mighty power" refers to the Greek word, "**Dunamis**", which is resurrection power. This same power that the Father used to raise His Son from the dead, works in us! This is God's ultimate power! It is not the same power that raised Lazarus from the dead, though, because Lazarus was raised only to die again. Christ, however, was raised to live eternally. This same ultimate, glorious power is at work within us! Glory to God!

I pray that you will continually experience the immeasurable greatness of God's power made available to you through faith. Then your lives will be an advertisement

of this immense power as it works through you! This is the mighty power ²⁰ that was released when God raised Christ from the dead and exalted him to the place of highest honor and supreme authority in the heavenly realm!

Ephesians 1:19-20 TPT

The only way to access this power is through faith. Without FAITH it is impossible to please God (Hebrews 11:6 KJV). There is no need to pray for more faith because faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God (Romans 10:17 KJV). Your faith will increase and grow into full maturity when you study the Word of God, pursue the Messiah in all the scriptures of the Bible, study His Names, search for His attributes, and enrich yourself by studying the feasts of Adonai.

We have received authority and Godly power to overcome illness, wage mental warfare and trample all evil power coming against us! Where there is power, there is authority.

Behold, I have given you authority and power to trample upon serpents and scorpions and [physical and mental strength and ability] over all the power that the enemy possesses; and nothing shall in any way harm you.

Luke 10:19 AMPC

Let us use this power to overcome the fears that keep us in bondage, and replace them with Godly, sacrificial (*Agape*) love. Day by day we will become more like Him, being transformed by the Holy Spirit into the image and likeness of our Messiah.

2. GOD'S OMNIPRESENCE

We can now easily assume that "omnipresent" means "all present". Adonai is everywhere at the same time. His divine presence encompasses the whole universe. There is no location He does not inhabit. His omnipresence indicates He is distinct from the universe but simultaneously inhabits the entirety of it. **He is everywhere at once!** Nothing is hidden from His eyes. God lives with us every moment. Isaiah prophesied that Christ would come to earth as Emmanuel - God with us! Matthew recorded that Isaiah's prophecy was fulfilled because Christ was born from a virgin and was indeed called Emmanuel. The reason God emphasises Jesus being **with** us is that, when Adam and Eve transgressed in the Garden of Eden, they lost the presence of the Lord, but He restored it! Hallelujah!

I am a God who is everywhere and not in one place only. ²⁴ No one can hide where I cannot see them. Do you not know that I am everywhere in heaven and on earth?
Jeremiah 23:23-24 GNT

Where could I go from your Spirit? Where could I run and hide from your face? ⁸ If I go up to heaven, you're there! If I go down to the realm of the dead, you're there too! ⁹ If I fly with wings into the shining dawn, you're there! If I fly into the radiant sunset, you're there waiting! ¹⁰ Wherever I go, your hand will guide me; your strength will empower me. ¹¹ It's impossible to disappear from you or to ask the darkness to hide me, for your presence is everywhere, bringing light into my night. Psalm 139:7-11 TPT

How easily we can be overcome by self-pity when we ask questions such as, "Where are you, God? Are you even alive? Don't you see my suffering?"

Adonai is Omnipresent! He is present in all our situations!

We limit Adonai and His attributes by small thinking. Let us embrace the Written Word of God so the Living Word can manifest His true nature to us!

3. GOD'S OMNISCIENCE

Omniscience means "all-knowing" and "all-wise". Adonai knows everything about the past, present and future. He never needs to learn anything, and nothing catches Him by surprise. Yehôvâh Elohim is the source of knowledge and wisdom which is found completely in the Messiah.

But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption. 1 Corinthians 1:30 KJV

For it is not from man that we draw our life but from God as we are being joined to Jesus, the Anointed One. And now he is our God-given wisdom, our virtue, our holiness, and our redemption. ³¹ And this fulfills what is written: If anyone boasts, let him only boast in all that the Lord has done! 1 Corinthians 1:30-31 TPT

Knowing that Yehôvâh Elohim is omniscient, convinces us to rest assured. He knows all our needs and will satisfy us! He will change disappointments into delight, frustrations into hope. Instead of shame,

we will receive a double portion of boldness. Instead of disgrace, we will rejoice in our inheritance (Isaiah 61:7). Yes, even the least of the smallest desires of our hearts are known to God. There are times when we don't even realise our desires. But God knows them all! Sometimes we get stressed out for many reasons and end up exhausted.

Behind our stresses, there is an unfulfilled or unrecognised desire. An unfulfilled desire is a desire of the heart which no one can fulfil. An unrecognised desire is a desire of the heart which we are not aware of. But Adonai knows all, and He desires to fulfil it for us.

Many scriptures indicate that Adonai already knows our thoughts, e.g., when the scribes and the Pharisees watched Yashuah to see if He would heal on the Sabbath day so they could find an accusation against Him.

But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. Luke 6:8 KJV

The scribes and Pharisees were rule-oriented, but our Messiah will always be love-oriented! Every act of God is an act of love. Embrace this thought, believe it, and your foundation will never collapse or crack.

Who could ever wrap their minds around the riches of God, the depth of his wisdom, and the marvel of his perfect knowledge? Who could ever explain the wonder of his decisions or search out the mysterious way he carries out his plans? ³⁴ For who has discovered how the Lord thinks or is wise enough to be the one to advise him in his plans?
Romans 11:33-34 TPT

4. GOD'S OMNIBENEVOLENCE

There is one characteristic and attribute of Yashuah that I believe stands out. That is His omnibenevolence! Omnibenevolence refers to Adonai's perfection or unlimited goodness.

"God is LOVE"!

Yehôvâh Elohim is indeed love, and he that loves not, knows not Adonai (1 John 3:8).

We have been misled into believing that Adonai **expelled** Adam and Eve from the Garden of Eden after they had sinned because **He was mad at them**. This is not the truth, as this was an ACT OF LOVE. Adonai protected Adam and Eve from eating from the Tree of Life in their fallen state. Had they eaten from the Tree of Life, Satan would have kept the complete human race in bondage forever, without a chance of redemption.

Adonai desires that we should eat from the Tree of Life, but not in our fallen state. After we have received our full redemption and have been fully restored to the image and likeness of Yehôvâh Elohim, the Tree of Life is given to us in Revelation 22, the last and final book revealing God's restoration plan.

It was an act of love when the Father sacrificed His only beloved Son, and through His Blood restored us to His original intent!

And by the blood of his cross, everything in heaven and earth is brought back to himself—back to its original intent, restored to innocence again! Colossians 1:20 TPT

Love fulfils the law, as Paul explains.

Let no debt remain outstanding, except the continuing debt to love one another, for whoever loves others has fulfilled the law. ⁹ The commandments, "You shall not commit adultery," "You shall not murder," "You shall not steal," "You shall not covet," and whatever other command there may be, are summed up in this one command: "Love your neighbor as yourself." ¹⁰ Love does no harm to a neighbor. Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.
Romans 13:8-10 NIV

For the entire law is fulfilled by keeping this one command: "Love your neighbor as yourself." Galatians 5:14 NIV

This is not a new commandment. It was ordained in the beginning.

*You shall not hate your brother in your heart, but you shall reason frankly with your neighbor, lest you incur sin because of him. ¹⁸ You shall not take vengeance or bear a grudge against the sons of your own people, but you shall **love your neighbor** as yourself: I am the Lord.*
Leviticus 19:17-18 ESV

*Righteousness and justice are the foundation of your throne; **love** and faithfulness go before you.*
Psalm 89:14 NIV

*Righteousness and justice are the foundation of Your throne; **Lovingkindness** and truth go before You.*
Psalm 89:14 AMP

The apostles understood that the foundation of the Kingdom was based on this principle of love, as taught by the Messiah. It is because of sacrificial (*Agape*) love that we now find our redemption in and through

the Blood of Christ. This is not the conditional love that humans exhibit. When earthly things fade away, our love for one another also fades away.

God is love! Those who are living in love are living in God, and God lives through them. ¹⁷ By living in God, love has been brought to its full expression in us so that we may fearlessly face the day of judgment, because all that Jesus now is, so are we in this world. ¹⁸ Love never brings fear, for fear is always related to punishment. But love's perfection drives the fear of punishment far from our hearts. Whoever walks constantly afraid of punishment has not reached love's perfection. ¹⁹ Our love for others is our grateful response to the love God first demonstrated to us.

1 John 4:16b-19 TPT

The story of Abraham and Isaac is a typology. It is a foreshadowing of the love of the Father who offered His only begotten Son to deal with the sin of this world once and for all.

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. John 3:16 KJV

The greatest love a person can show is to die for someone else (John 15:13). It is easy to die for a beloved friend, but few will lay down their lives for an enemy. This is the sacrificial love of Adonai! He laid down His life for humanity while we were still His enemies.

The greatest love is when that One laid down His life so everyone else could live through His death!

Paul's prayer in Ephesians 3 needs much attention and meditation so these deep truths can penetrate our innermost being and enable us to grasp the LOVE OF ADONAI.

May He grant you out of the rich treasury of His glory to be strengthened and reinforced with mighty power in the inner man by the [Holy] Spirit [Himself indwelling your innermost being and personality].¹⁷ May Christ through your faith [actually] dwell (settle down, abide, make His permanent home) in your hearts! May you be rooted deep in love and founded securely on love,¹⁸ That you may have the power and be strong to apprehend and grasp with all the saints [God's devoted people, the experience of that love] what is the breadth and length and height and depth [of it];¹⁹ [That you may really come] to know [practically, through experience for yourselves] the love of Christ, which far surpasses mere knowledge [without experience]; that you may be filled [through all your being] unto all the fullness of God [may have the richest measure of the divine Presence, and become a body wholly filled and flooded with God Himself]!²⁰ Now to Him Who, by (in consequence of) the [action of His] power that is at work within us, is able to [carry out His purpose and] do superabundantly, far over and above all that we [dare] ask or think [infinitely beyond our highest prayers, desires, thoughts, hopes, or dreams]²¹ To Him be glory in the church and in Christ Jesus throughout all generations forever and ever. Amen (so be it).

Ephesians 3:16-21 AMPC

The most prominent thing we must believe when laying down the foundation is that **God is love** and His every act is an **act of love**. Even when we do not understand it and our human reasoning tries to convince us otherwise, we must hold onto this very important fact that **Adonai is love and everything He is doing in our lives is an act of love**.

I can sincerely testify to this. I seriously doubted the actions of Adonai in my life. I could not understand why certain things went so wrong. Little did I know that Adonai was performing a magnificent work in me to transform me into His image and likeness.

For My thoughts are not your thoughts, nor are your ways My ways, declares the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts. Isaiah 55:8-9 KJV

Yashuah answered my cry! Therefore, my beloved reader, I can encourage you! When the storm comes, when trials and persecutions multiply and things are going from bad to worse, stand and hold your ground! Help is on its way! Adonai knows what He is doing. He is preparing you, cleansing, sanctifying, and setting you apart for His special use!

But before any of this happens, they'll arrest you, hunt you down, and drag you to court and jail. It will go from bad to worse, dog-eat-dog, everyone at your throat because you carry my name. You'll end up on the witness stand, called to testify. Make up your mind right now not to worry about it. I'll give you the words and wisdom that will reduce all your accusers to stammers and stutters. ¹⁶⁻¹⁹ "You'll even be turned in by parents, brothers, relatives, and friends.

Some of you will be killed. There's no telling who will hate you because of me. Even so, every detail of your body and soul—even the hairs of your head!—is in my care; nothing of you will be lost. Staying with it—that's what is required.

Stay strong to the end! You won't be sorry; you'll be saved! Luke 21:12-19 MSG

When all this starts to happen, up on your feet. Stand tall with your heads high. Help is on the way! Luke 21:28 MSG

What a journey I have been on! I can testify firsthand that if you hold on to the end, you will not be sorry! I guarantee that help is indeed on its way and your deliverance is near! What you are going through is indeed an act of LOVE from Adonai, your Beloved! He knows what He is doing!! Trust Him with all your heart! Lean not unto your own understanding, and He WILL direct your paths and lead you into victory and maturity (Proverbs 3:5-6)!

Comfort for the Contrite

Adonai, who lives in a high and holy place, is the very same God who also lives with the contrite and lowly in spirit.

*And shall say, Cast ye up, cast ye up, prepare the way, **take up the stumbling block out of the way of my people.** ¹⁵ For thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy; I dwell in the **high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit**, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.*
Isaiah 57:14-15 KJV

The word “**contrite**” means “*feeling or expressing remorse at the recognition that one has done wrong.*” This means that Adonai lives with those who are repentant and lowly in spirit. The last part of the text indicates that Adonai dwells with the humble to revive their spirits.

This is a mystery. The general meaning of contrite is repentant. As Paul indicates in Hebrews 6, repentance is the very first step to take before we can build our houses. Repentance, thus, is the birth canal of salvation. Repentance, in a nutshell, is a positive change in the mind and a 180-degree turnaround. God uses the enemy and our circumstances to bring us low, crush and humble us, and renew our spirit. “Bruised, broken-hearted and crushed” describes “*lowly in spirit*”.

Sometimes, we undergo indescribable painful situations and become wounded and broken-hearted because of unexpected outcomes. It may be the loss of a loved one, a dragging goal yet to be achieved, eagerly anticipating a blessing that’s been avoiding us for many years, or serious financial problems. In all the pain, God is with us, holding and carrying us like a father carries his child.

When you pass through the waters, I will be with you; And through the rivers, they will not overflow you. When you walk through the fire, you will not be scorched, nor will the flame burn you. Isaiah 43:2 AMP

This verse is well-known to us, but few realise what the origin of this passage is. Let us reflect on the previous verse.

For thus saith Jehovah, After seventy years are accomplished for Babylon, I will visit you, and perform my

good word toward you, in causing you to return to this place. Jeremiah 29:10 ASV

Here, the Lord spoke to Israel at the end of their 70-year period of captivity. They went into this captivity because of their prideful lives. *"Pride goes before destruction, a haughty spirit before a fall"* (Proverbs 16:18 NIV). Now we can see the act of love from God's side. Adonai intervened by preventing Israel from falling and being destroyed. He chose to rather bring them to a place where they were temporarily humbled, bruised, broken-hearted and crushed so they could get to a point of being "lowly in the spirit". Then Adonai declared:

'For I know the plans I have for you', declares the LORD, 'plans to prosper you and not to harm you, plans to give you hope and a future.' Jeremiah 29:11 NIV

I hope you can see that this act of love toward Israel was indeed a mystery, as I also experienced in my own life. Yashuah loves me so much that He did not want to see me go down into permanent destruction. He rather used my circumstances and my enemies to get me to a point of being humbled, broken-hearted, bruised and crushed, so I could repent of my own free will. My Beloved declared He would hear me and deliver me, for His plan was to prosper me and not harm me, to give me hope and a future!

Glory to my God who is working a work of mystery! One day we shall cry out with the saints before the sea of glass mingled with fire in front of the throne:

*Great and marvelous are thy works, Lord God Almighty;
just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints.*
Revelation 15:3b KJV

Love is large and incredibly patient. Love is gentle and consistently kind to all. It refuses to be jealous when blessing comes to someone else. Love does not brag about one's achievements nor inflate its own importance. ⁵ Love does not traffic in shame and disrespect, nor selfishly seek its own honor. Love is not easily irritated or quick to take offense. ⁶ Love joyfully celebrates honesty and finds no delight in what is wrong. ⁷ Love is a safe place of shelter, for it never stops believing the best for others. Love never takes failure as defeat, for it never gives up. ⁸ Love never stops loving. It extends beyond the gift of prophecy, which eventually fades away. It is more enduring than tongues, which will one day fall silent. Love remains long after words of knowledge are forgotten. ⁹ Our present knowledge and our prophecies are but partial, ¹⁰ but when love's perfection arrives, the partial will fade away.

1 Corinthians 13:4-10 TPT

There is still much to share regarding the attributes of Adonai, but it is not part of the scope of this book. Here is a list of some other attributes of God, but search the scriptures in your own time to discover Yashuah.

- God is **Infinite** - He is self-existing, without origin. (Colossians 1:17)
- God is **Immutable** - He never changes. (Malachi 3:6; Hebrews 13:8)
- God is **Self-Sufficient** - He has no needs. (John 5:26)
- God is **Wise** - He is full of perfect and unchanging wisdom. (Romans 11:33)

- God is **Faithful** – He is infinitely, unchangingly true. (Deuteronomy 7:9; 2 Timothy 2:13)
- God is **Just** – He is infinitely, unchangeably right, and perfect in all He does. (Deuteronomy 32:4)
- God is **Merciful** – He is infinitely, unchangeably compassionate and kind. (Romans 9:15-16)
- God is **Gracious** – God is infinitely inclined to spare the guilty. (Psalm 145:8)
- God is **Holy** – He is infinitely, unchangingly perfect. (Revelation 4:8)
- God is **Glorious** – He is infinitely beautiful and great. (Habakkuk 3:4)

*Around the throne and on each side stood four living creatures, full of eyes in front and behind. ⁷ The first living creature resembled a lion, the second an ox, the third had a human face, and the fourth was like an eagle in flight. ⁸ Each of the four living creatures had six wings, full of eyes all around and under their wings. They worshiped without ceasing, day and night, singing, "**Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God, the Almighty! The Was, the Is, and the Coming!**" Revelation 4:6b-8 TPT*

Dig Deep

Now that we understand the only way to build our houses is on this Rock, the Petra, and that this foundation is built upon the principle of "hearing and doing", the next very important action is to **dig deep!**

Build Your House on the Rock

*And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? ⁴⁷ Whosoever cometh to me, and **heareth my sayings, and doeth them**, I will shew you to whom he is like: ⁴⁸ He is like a man which built an house, **and digged deep**, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. ⁴⁹ But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.*
Luke 6:46-49 KJV

Digging deep means getting rid of unwanted building materials and replacing them with reinforcement steel and concrete so the foundation will not crack. An ineffective foundation will always cause a house to collapse, regardless of how strong the rest of the building materials are. Let us discuss some improper building materials we often use in our foundations.

1. THE PAST

The very first element to get rid of is the past, because it constantly holds us back and keeps us in bondage by memories of trauma and hurt. Satan is a master at reminding us of the past. I have seen many people even deliberately holding onto their past. We are new creatures with a new identity and a new future in Christ Jesus and should act like it!

My old identity has been co-crucified with Christ and no longer lives. And now the essence of this new life is no longer mine, for the Anointed One lives his life through me – we live in union as one! My new life is empowered by the faith of the Son of God who loves me so much that he gave himself for me, dispensing his life into mine!
Galatians 2:20 TPT

At last, we have freedom, for Christ has set us free! We must always cherish this truth and firmly refuse to go back into the bondage of our past. Galatians 5:1 TPT

I don't depend on my own strength to accomplish this; however I do have one compelling focus: I forget all of the past as I fasten my heart to the future instead. Philipians 3:13 TPT

We receive right standing with the Father because of what Christ did for us on the cross.

May my only boast be found in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ. In him I have been crucified to this natural realm; and the natural realm is dead to me and no longer dominates my life. Galatians 6:14 TPT

To get rid of the past, we must remind ourselves that no one can earn God's righteousness. It can only be transferred to us when we no longer rely on our own works but believe in the One who powerfully declared the ungodly to be righteous in His eyes. It is faith that transfers God's righteousness into our account (Romans 4:5 TPT).

2. TRADITIONS

The Bible warns that we are taken into captivity by our human traditions and philosophies. They prevent us from obedience and deliverance.

Colossians 2:8

New International Version

See to it that no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the elemental spiritual forces of this world rather than on Christ.

New Living Translation

Don't let anyone capture you with empty philosophies and high-sounding nonsense that come from human thinking and from the spiritual powers of this world, rather than from Christ.

Mark 7:8

New International Version

You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to human traditions.

New Living Translation

For you ignore God's law and substitute your own tradition.

These traditions put a veil over our eyes and prevent us from seeing the truth. Our hearing gets dull, and the truth makes little sense to the flesh. Only God can break this yoke of bondage by His Holy Spirit and mercy.

3. PREJUDICES

In our society, we seriously need to deal with prejudices. We need to get rid of racial, denominational, social, and personal prejudices.

4. PRECONCEPTIONS

I believe the most damaging preconception we have is our wrong perception of who Jesus is and how to serve Him. I am astonished that believers seek the Lord in pagan rituals, e.g., Christmas, holidays (pagan feast days that have nothing to do with the Lord's Feasts) and hiding Easter eggs.

Little by little, precept upon precept, the world creates a twisted picture of the Messiah, and we all fall into the trap. The result is unbelief. We try to bring comfort into our discomfort by coming up with new doctrines, such as that God does not always want to heal, or that it was His will to take my child or spouse to heaven. By implication, we accuse God of a child's or spouse's death. When we start believing this nonsense, our houses will eventually collapse. It cannot and will not last.

5. UNBELIEF

Satan is a master at stealing our faith through lies and deceptions. We should not pray for more faith, but we need to get rid of unbelief. In the Gospel of Mark, a man came to Yashuah, asking if He **could** heal His Son (Mark 9:22). Yashuah answered (my own words), "What do you mean, if I can? This is not about Me. This is about your faith. If you believe, all things are possible" (Mark 9:23). The father cried out with tears, "*Lord, I believe; help me with my unbelief*" (Mark 9:24).

Unbelief closes the mind to faith. Many believers are captured within their unbelief when they make remarks such as, "I have been praying for my spouse now for 30 years and nothing has happened." They give up because their unbelief pictures Adonai as one who cannot help and does not want to help. Let us dig deep and get rid of unbelief. Let us lay down a good and strong foundation that will keep standing in the storm.

6. DNA TIES

At the beginning of this ministry, the Lord took me through a process of deliverance. I recorded my experience in a booklet called "**Our Battle**".

The Lord showed me the importance of breaking soul ties and getting rid of hidden sin. I identified these hidden sins as "DNA Ties". This booklet and some prayers of repentance are currently part of the preparation work for healing sessions. (I highly recommend studying this booklet and confessing these sins in an audible voice. It is available on our website. <https://www.berashithministry.co.za/index.php/booklets>) For your information, I will provide a summary of its contents.

Many years before I wrote the booklet, the Lord told me that I was stubborn. He gave me scripture to convince me.

*For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness
is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the
word of the LORD, he hath also rejected thee from being
king. 1 Samuel 15:23 KJV*

At first, I resisted His correction and instruction. You see, the flesh will always manifest! It was about ten years later, while writing the booklet on DNA Ties, that my spiritual eyes were opened to receive the truth.

I had to dig deep by studying the meaning of the words God gave me in 1 Samuel. It was only then that I realised just how stubborn I was. Stubbornness is the iniquity of idolatry. You become your own idol. It is all about me, myself and my selfish life.

The Lord already knows all, and He wants to help us. He wants to cleanse us from all filthiness so we can stand before Him as a spotless and blameless Bride without wrinkles. He desires for us to become whole and holy again so He can set us apart for a special use as His Shulamite Bride - a warrior Bride for Him.

To lay the foundation and repair the temple, we must dig deep. The taller and bigger the building is going to be, the deeper we need to dig. We must get rid of filthiness, soft clay, and unsuitable materials, and insert reinforced concrete. Quite often we do not even realise that unsuitable materials are part of our foundations. Adding to the six unsuitable materials already discussed are:

- Bitterness
- Unforgiveness
- Resentment (even after having forgiven someone!)
- Strife and envy (*"Where there are strife and envy, there are all evil works"* James 3:16.)
- Stubbornness
- Rebellion
- Pride
- Guilt
- Unlovingness
- Lack of nurture
- Occultism
- Rejection

The list can go on and on. There are many scriptures on the above aspects. (***For a complete study on this topic, please download for free the five booklets from our website. "Our Battle" is part of The Light Towers booklets.***) The only way to deal with these sins, especially with the rebellious spirit, is execution.

My testimony on pride.

While the Lord was dealing with my hidden sins, I went through a 30-day cleansing process with the Holy Spirit. Each day, the Spirit revealed to me another hidden sin. On the last night, I asked the Lord to not hold back but to reveal all the filthiness that was still left. That night, I experienced something like a vision. I was asleep, yet fully awake in the spirit. The Holy Spirit showed me a peacock. I laughed and said to the Lord that I knew a peacock represented "rebellion". At that stage, I did not realise God was showing me the pride in my own heart. The next morning, while studying the meaning of rebellion, God opened my eyes, and I wrote a prayer of confession. That was the final nail in the coffin! I willingly crucified the FLESH! My self-life died that day on the stake. This led to the birth of the five booklets I wrote under the guidance of the Holy Spirit.

The following scripture broke open for me:

I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. Galatians 2:20 KJV

"My old identity has been co-crucified with Christ and no longer lives. And now the essence of this new life is no longer mine, for the Anointed One lives his life through

me—we live in union as one! My new life is empowered by the faith of the Son of God who loves me so much that he gave himself for me, dispensing his life into mine!”

Galatians 2:20 TPT

Glory to the Most High God, Yehôvâh Elohim! “*How marvelous are Your works!*” How perfect are your works in my life, my Lord! Glory to Yashuah HaMashiach for setting me free!

We are all born with the spirit of rebellion. If you have not yet repented of it, your foundation will be shaken.

THE WORD OF GOD

I find it very interesting that believers make comments such as, “***I have a problem with the Bible***”, referring to the alleged contradictions in the Scriptures and the deviation from the true meaning of the Scriptures in different translations.

Most translations are being manipulated by the institutional church. Read more on this topic in my book, “Dispensations”. (*It can be downloaded from our website for free.*) All translations are a mere interpretation of the original Aramaic or Hebrew text into English. Afrikaans is only about 100 years old and simply does not have the vocabulary to translate the original Bible correctly. Thus, some translations may not be completely accurate. We cannot, however, have a problem with the Bible, which is the Written Word that became flesh as Yashuah HaMashiach (John 1:1), and simultaneously say that we believe in Him.

If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken;
John 10:35 KJV

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. John 1:1 KJV

And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth. John 1:14 KJV

*And I saw heaven opened and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. ¹² His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. ¹³ And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called **The Word of God.***
Revelation 19:11-13 KJV

We cannot deny that Yehôvâh Elohim is the Word of God!

WE CANNOT BELIEVE IN JESUS AND YET NOT BELIEVE THE BIBLE.

Jesus explained to His disciples that only for a little while they would see Him, but that He had to leave and return to His Father who sent Him.

Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. John 14:19 KJV

Jesus declared that even though He would not be on earth any longer, His disciples would still see Him. The world would not see Him, though. This is still valid today. His disciples can see Him, but many cannot see Jesus. How do we then see Him?

We see Jesus in the Old and New Testaments!

The Messiah commanded us to keep His word. Our obedience is an act of love toward Him.

***If** a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. John 14:23 KJV*

“**If**” indicates a precondition. **If** we love the Messiah, we can expect to receive a blessing. That means the Triune God (*the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit*) will come and abide within us. What a promise!

The law motivates by fear, but grace motivates by love. You can motivate your children by using fear, but the only way to keep them close to you, even when they are grown up, is with love. Thus, love is the motivation of obedience.

Jesus manifests Himself to us through the Word of God! Reading and studying the Written Word of God is a prerequisite, before the Living Word, Yashuah, will manifest Himself. Then, love will open the door **for the Trinity to abide within us!**

We believe we can interpret scripture as we wish. But it is only the author of a book who can interpret the meaning of the passage.

Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. ²¹ For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. 2 Peter 1:20-21 KJV

The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times.
Psalm 12:6 KJV

Many wrongly believe that ordinary men wrote the Word of God. The Holy Spirit, however, was the only author of the Word. Man was only the vessel and was subject to error.

- Adam was made from the dust of the earth.
- Therefore, man refers to clay. This implies that the Bible came through the vessel of clay.
- According to David, man, as clay, needs to be purified seven times by the fire of the Holy Spirit.
- The silver in the furnace also needs purification seven times. The number seven refers to the perfection of the Holy Spirit. Silver always refers to our redemption.

A COAL FROM THE ALTAR

One of the most significant examples of man being purified, is the Prophet Isaiah. He considered himself impure, living in a society of impurity. The Lord knew it. A seraph took a live coal from the altar, touched Isaiah's lips, and cleansed him.

Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly. ³ And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory. ⁴ And the posts of the door moved at the voice of him that cried, and the house was filled with smoke. ⁵ Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts. ⁶ Then flew one of the

seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar: ⁷ And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.
Isaiah 6:2-7 KJV

What words did Isaiah utter directly after his lips had been cleansed?

Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. Isaiah 7:14 KJV

Yes, he prophesied that Immanuel was on His way to be born from a virgin! Glory to GOD! Saints, this is how the scriptures were written - by the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, using man as His vessel. Let there be no doubt that the Written Word cannot be broken. It is not of human inspiration or for human interpretation.

If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken.
John 10:35 KJV

THE VALUE OF THE SCRIPTURES

Satan came to Eve and made her doubt God's words. "*Did God really say you cannot eat from the tree, or you shall die?*" (Genesis 3:1-4)

When you do not know the scriptures and do not walk in truth, you will be deceived!

The presence of the "outlaw" is apparent by the activity of Satan, who uses all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs, spurious wonders, ¹⁰ and every form of evil deception

in order to deceive those who are perishing because they rejected the love of the truth that would lead them to being saved. ¹¹ Because of this, God sends them a powerful delusion that leads them to believe what is false. 2 Thessalonians 2:9-11 TPT

In contrast with Eve, Jesus walked in truth. When Satan tried to deceive Him in the desert, He knew the Scriptures could withstand the wiles of the devil. Satan used the same strategy as with Eve, namely, doubt.

If you are the Son of God...? Matthew 4:3

Without having a conversation with Satan, Jesus simply said:

It is written... Matthew 4:1-11

Satan always uses doubt to deceive us. The only way to deal with this kind of temptation is to quote scriptures!

IT IS WRITTEN!

As strange as the following might sound, it is true. **Having received the Holy Spirit does not necessarily mean that you are operating in the power of the Holy Spirit.** We learn this from the life of Yashuah.

And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: ¹⁷ And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.
Matthew 3:16-17 KJV

Directly after His baptism, Jesus received the Holy Spirit, but it was only after He had overcome temptation that He operated in the power of the Holy Spirit.

Just before Jesus ascended into the heavens, He promised His disciples the Father would send them a Helper.

John 14:26

American Standard Version

But the Comforter, even he Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said unto you.

The International Standard Version

But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you all things and remind you of everything that I have told you.

Let us also consider the following verses:

But you have received the Holy Spirit, and he lives within you, so you don't need anyone to teach you what is true. For the Spirit teaches you everything you need to know, and what he teaches is true—it is not a lie. So just as he has taught you, remain in fellowship with Christ.
1 John 2:27 NLT

Yet when the Spirit of Truth comes, he will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on his own accord, but will speak whatever he hears and will declare to you the things that are to come. John 16:13 ISV

The Holy Spirit will always glorify Yashuah. Any teaching or ministry that glorifies a person is not from the Holy Spirit. In that case, the Holy Spirit will eventually leave. Many ministries go astray because men take the glory.

The Glory always belongs to our Lord, Yehôvâh Elohim!

THE NATURE OF GOD'S WORD

Remember that we first need the Written Word before the Living Word of God can manifest. Both the Written Word and the Living Word are Jesus!

For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. Hebrews 4:12 KJV

When we study the Written Word of God, it will quickly determine our heart's intentions. It pierces deeply into the spirit and soul to start the process of sanctification. We need to be sanctified to be restored, as each person is born from a corruptible seed. The Word heals us (Psalm 107:20; Jeremiah 30:17) and makes us whole and holy again.

Adonai commanded us to be holy, as He is holy (1 Peter 1:16). Thus, we can say:

- The Word of God is alive and powerful.
- Only the Word of God can penetrate the soul and spirit, the thoughts, and the heart.
- It discerns our hearts and analyses us to bring us unto holiness.

- While we are reading the Bible, the Bible is reading us.

Many years ago, as I was crying out to the Lord to deliver me from the miserable situation my life was in, I read the following scripture.

And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.

Jeremiah 3:15 KJV

I asked the Lord, "Where are these pastors? They are surely absent from my life!" God was faithful and answered my cry! He sent many to minister to me according to my heart's desires. He answered my questions through them, so I can now share them with you!

For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe. 1 Thessalonians 2:13 KJV

The Word of God is not the word of men. If you receive it as the word of men, it will not prosper or bring you any truth. But if you read it as the Word of God, it will set you free! Our provision is in His promise!

*Everything we could ever need for life and godliness has already been deposited in us by his divine power. For all this was lavished upon us through the rich experience of knowing him who has called us by name and invited us to come to him through a glorious manifestation of his goodness. ⁴ As a result of this, **he has given you magnificent promises that are beyond all price**, so that through the power of these tremendous promises we can experience **partnership** with the divine nature, by*

which you have escaped the corrupt desires that are of the world. 2 Peter 1:3-4 TPT

This promise entails a partnership with Him. How amazing! The Greek word "**koinonos**" means "**to participate as a partner, to partake of, to be a companion with, to have fellowship with**" the divine nature. That God shares His nature with us is one of the great mysteries of our faith. We are born of the Holy Spirit to be God's true sons and daughters, and **every father imparts his DNA and his "nature" to his children.** The Greek word "**physis**" (nature) is taken from the word "**phyō**", which means "**to give birth, produce, bring forth, or to grow up.**" Christ lives in us and transforms us into His very own likeness. In Christ, we share His divine nature. We will all bear the image of the Man from heaven, Jesus Christ! (See Romans 8:9-25; 1 Corinthians 15:12-57.) Yashuah explained to Nicodemus that we all need a born from above experience. The following statement may sound confusing. Many may have the same father, Yehôvâh Elohim, but not all of us have the same mother. Our Father is in Heaven but some of us are born of the slave woman, Hagar, representing Ishmael, the slave-child. Those who are born from above, from the New Heavenly Jerusalem, are born of the free woman, Sarah, representing the free child, Isaac. *(For more information, read "Isaac and Ishmael, Born from a Free and Slave Woman". It can be downloaded from our website under Products, Booklets menu.)*

1. THE WORD GIVES FAITH

Often, we wrongly pray for more faith, but faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God (Romans 10:17). Paul explains it is impossible to believe in Him unless we have heard of Him.

*How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and **how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard?** and how shall they hear without a preacher? ¹⁵ And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! ¹⁶ But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report?*
Romans 10:14-16 KJV

Nobody can hear of the Messiah without a preacher. Paul seems to say that the problem is not necessarily a hearing problem but a believing problem, as all do not obey the Gospel. When Paul points to the word of the Isaiah, he refers to Isaiah 53:5, which speaks of our healing. Not all believed this report of Isaiah. We are in bondage because of unbelief!

But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.
Isaiah 53:5 KJV

Paul continues, speaking now of Israel!

When you see God reach out to those you consider your inferiors—outsiders!—you'll become insanely jealous. When you see God reach out to people you think are religiously stupid, you'll throw temper tantrums. Isaiah dared to speak out these words of God: "People found and welcomed me who never so much as looked for me. And I found and welcomed people who had never even asked about me. Then he capped it with a damning indictment:

*Day after day after day, I beckoned Israel with open arms,
And got nothing for my trouble but cold shoulders and icy
stares.” Romans 10:18-21 MSG*

Paul points to the dull ears of Israel. With open arms, Adonai longs to receive us, yet we give Him a cold shoulder. Let us learn from Israel to read the Written Word, listen to it, and receive it gladly. Only then will faith come through hearing and hearing through the Word of God.

2. THE WORD MAKES US CHILDREN

The Word of God gives us the right to become His children. How wonderful!

*God was delighted to give us birth by the truth of his
infallible Word so that we would fulfill his chosen destiny
for us and become the favorite ones out of all his creation!*
James 1:18 TPT

Of all Adonai's creations, we are the favourite ones! We receive the Spirit, the Holy Ghost, and He brings about our adoption to sonship. Then we cry out, "Abba Father! Daddy!" (Romans 8:15).

*Because you are his sons, God sent the Spirit of His Son
into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, "Abba, Father".*
Galatians 4:6 NIV

3. THE WORD PURIFIES US

*Seeing ye have purified your souls in **obeying the truth**
through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see*

*that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently:
23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of
incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth
for ever. 1 Peter 1:22-23 KJV*

What an act of grace from our loving Father to give us a new chance to become His children. He restores everything. We are born from the flesh - from a corruptible seed, but our born-again experience gives us a new life in Christ Jesus. This time, we receive our Daddy's DNA which can only be established through an incorruptible seed – the Word of God.

The seed of the Word of God is incorruptible and gives us new life. The nature of the seed determines the fruit!

4. THE WORD HELPS US GROW IN HOLINESS

The Word of God gives us spiritual nourishment and leads us into maturity.

*In the same way that nursing infants cry for milk, we must
intensely crave after the pure spiritual milk of God's Word.
For this "milk" will cause you to grow into maturity, fully
nourished and strong for life [The Greek is "grow into
salvation."] 3 especially now that you have had a taste of
the goodness of Yahweh and have experienced his
kindness. 1 Peter 2:2-3 TPT*

The nourishment contained in the milk of the Word is like an antibiotic for guile. This milk contains an element that eliminates guile.

Therefore, the Word is guileless, unadulterated milk.

The Living Word is the "**logos**" of God. The "**pure spiritual milk**" is the sustaining power of God's Word, coming from His very breast to nourish and strengthen our inner being. From verse three, we can see that this "**milk**" is the Lord, dispensed to us by His Word. Our craving for this "**milk**" is not only because of necessity, but of delight. He is the Seed, the Word, the Milk, the Lord, and the Living Stone.

Just as a baby is fed on milk for many months to help him grow, likewise, we drink this milk from our Father's breasts, the Written Word of God, to grow and reach spiritual maturity.

For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. ¹³ For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. ¹⁴ But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

Hebrews 5:12-14 KJV

A REVELATION

On Tuesday, 18th May 2021, a couple visited me. During our conversation, they referred to the stage our local churches (the structural church) were in. The Afrikaans word "**doleer**" refers to a stage of grief. The church is grieving over the announcements of their synod on same sex marriages, etc.

That evening, during our weekly gathering, I forgot the correct word and accidentally used the word "**adolescence**". A person who

participated via Zoom, sent me a message afterwards as she received a revelation about how appropriate the “wrong” word, “adolescence”, was.

Adolescence (from Latin “**adolescere**” - ‘to grow up’) is a transitional stage of physical and psychological development that generally occurs during the period from puberty to legal adulthood (age of majority). Adolescence is usually associated with the teenage years, but its physical, psychological, or cultural expressions may begin earlier and end later. For example, puberty now typically begins during preadolescence, particularly in females. Physical growth (particularly in males) and cognitive development can extend into the early twenties. Thus, age provides only a rough marker of adolescence, and scholars have found it difficult to agree upon a precise definition of adolescence.

She wrote:

“Adolescence means the stage between childhood and adulthood... You referred to the church being in adolescence - so essentially it refers to the teenage phase of development, and in psychology, the developmental task that needs to happen then is finding identity. So, I think it makes sense and you heard right. The church has not reached maturity or adulthood.” “Adolescence is often also a time of rebellion, where adolescents listen to their **peers** rather than their **parents**. The church also listens to their peers in the world, rather than to their Father, e.g., about their opinion on homosexual marriages in church and the existence of hell. It was no coincidence that you also pointed to the scripture in Ezekiel 2 which refers to rebellious people.”

*And he said unto me, Son of man, I send thee to the children of Israel, to a rebellious nation that hath rebelled against me: they and their fathers have transgressed against me, even unto this very day. ⁴ For they are impudent children and stiffhearted. I do send thee unto them; and thou shalt say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD. ⁵ And they, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear, (for they are a rebellious house,) yet shall know that there hath been a prophet among them. ⁶ **And thou, son of man, be not afraid of them, neither be afraid of their words, though briers and thorns be with thee, and thou dost dwell among scorpions: be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house. ⁷ And thou shalt speak my words unto them, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear: for they are most rebellious. ⁸ But thou, son of man, hear what I say unto thee; Be not thou rebellious like that rebellious house: open thy mouth, and eat that I give thee. ⁹ And when I looked, behold, an hand was sent unto me; and, lo, a roll of a book was therein; ¹⁰ And he spread it before me; and it was written within and without: and there was written therein lamentations, and mourning, and woe.***

Ezekiel 2:2-10 KJV

She continued her message the following day:

"This morning, I felt Him (Adonai) refer to the **bar mitzvah** and **bat mitzvah** in Hebrew culture. These are blessings at the age of 12 and 13 which essentially mean that a young person is afterwards counted as an adult. But the "church" has not had its bat mitzvah yet. They are searching for identity and blessing from peers, rather than from parents. They are "fashion conscious and seeker sensitive". In the world, gay marriages, etc., are fashionable. The church needs to come to Father YHVH for their **bat mitzvah**, for their blessing into adulthood and maturity and to find their identity in Christ."

"I also hear the following: They are like moody teenagers - slamming doors when they don't get their way!!! Claiming to be so misunderstood! Hormones and "muisneste"! Father YHVH has a beautiful sense of humor! He is really showing a picture I will understand."

"In adolescence, teenagers are also the 'centre of their own universe'. They are self-centred and it's all about them!"

I hear the words: "Get over yourself and grow up!"

"I agree with the scripture that says, *'By now you should be eating meat and not milk...!'*"

I was writing down Hebrews 5:12-14 in my discussion on *Growing in Holiness*, while this above message was being delivered to my cellphone. When the person pointed to the scripture "*you should be eating meat and not milk*", I forwarded Hebrews 5 to her. She forwarded the same scripture to me! We experienced the work of the Holy Spirit at the same time! What revelation knowledge we both received! GLORY to Yehôvâh Elohim!

5. THE WORD BRINGS MENTAL ILLUMINATION

For you were once darkness, but now you are light in the Lord. Live as children of light. Ephesians 5:8 NIV

You are all children of the light and children of the day. We do not belong to the night or to the darkness.
1 Thessalonians 5:5 NIV

Break open your Word within me until revelation-light shines out! Those with open hearts are given insight into your plans. Psalm 119:130 TPT

No education can bring any light. Only the Word of God brings light. Wisdom and education are not the same. I believe a great part of the trouble in the modern world is because of educated men. Coming from an academic background, with years of research and consultation experience, I can confirm that education means nothing. Solomon asked the Lord for **wisdom** and drew leaders from all the nations to meet this wise man.

6. THE WORD BRINGS PHYSICAL HEALING

It is heartbreaking to see so many people perish because they do not believe the Word of God can heal our physical bodies. As previously mentioned, not all believe the report of Isaiah 53:5 that by HIS stripes we are healed. David testified of God's healing power.

*Some of us were such fools, bringing on ourselves sorrow and suffering all because of our sins. ¹⁸ Sick and feeble, unable to stand the sight of food, **we drew near to the gates of death.** ¹⁹ Then we cried out, "Lord, help us!*

*Rescue us!" And he did! ²⁰ God spoke the words "**Be healed," and we were healed, delivered from death's door!** ²¹ So lift your hands and give thanks to God for his marvelous kindness and for his miracles of mercy for those he loves! Psalm 107:17-21 TPT*

Many scriptures in the Written Word of God promise healing. It includes physical healing and even healing of the soul and spirit! **Are you willing to believe the truth?** In the wilderness, Adonai introduced Himself for the very first time as the Healer, Yehôvâh Rapha, to His people, Israel.

I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the LORD that healeth thee. Exodus 15:26b KJV

According to the Strong's Dictionary, the word "**healeth**" comes from the Hebrew word "**râphâh**", meaning to thoroughly make whole and heal, as in healing received from a physician.

H7495 (Strong's)

râphâ'

A primitive root; properly to *mend* (by stitching), that is, (figuratively) to *cure*: - cure, (cause to) heal, physician, repair, X thoroughly, make whole.

SOME OF GOD'S PROMISES OF HEALING.

Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.

1 Peter 2:24 KJV

He sent his word, and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions. Psalm 107:20 KJV

Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases; ⁴ Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;

Psalm 103:3-4 KJV

Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

3 John 1:2 KJV

But let all my true friends shout for joy, all those who know and love what I do for you. Let them all say, "The Lord is great, and he delights in the prosperity of his servant."

Psalm 35:27 TPT

In my search for emotional healing and deliverance, the Word of God came to me through this scripture in Malachi.

But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.

Malachi 4:2 KJV

When I cried out for “righteousness” and begged to be delivered from the unrighteous deeds against me, the sun arose, and Yehôvâh Rapha brought healing in His wings! Joy broke through as calves released from their stall, running into the pasture joyfully with their tails held high!

Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: ¹⁵ And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.
James 5:14-15 KJV

One aspect of the “Doctrine of Christ” is the “laying on of hands” for the sick to receive their healing. Derek Prince testified that during a long sickness, he took the Written Word of God like medicine each day and his healing broke through. He experienced firsthand the words of Malachi.

But unto you that fear my name shall the sun of righteousness arise with healing in its wings; and ye shall go forth, and gambol as calves of the stall.
Malachi 4:2 ASV

*My son, attend to my words; incline thine ear unto my sayings. ²¹ Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart. ²² For they are life unto those that find them, and **health to all their flesh.***
Proverbs 4:20-22 KJV

**Let it deeply penetrate the innermost being of your soul
that we are redeemed by the Blood of the Lamb
and cleansed by the washing of the Word of God!**

The Word of God brings victory over Satan. It provides cleansing to the believer and is indeed a spiritual mirror to see where we still need to wipe off the dirt.

Let us not neglect the Bible, as it is the key to heaven!

Glory to Yehôvâh Elohim, who is our personal foundation. Let us now move forward unto perfection, as we study the Doctrinal Foundation of Christ in Part 2!



PART 2: DOCTRINAL FOUNDATION

INTRODUCTION

A DOCTRINAL FOUNDATION

Paul mentions the importance of moving unto full spiritual maturity and then lists seven very important principles of the Doctrine of Christ to enable the believer to lay down the foundation.

Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God: ² Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment ³ And this will we do, if God permit.
Hebrews 6:1-3 KJV

The principles thus are:

Repentance of dead works.

Faith toward God.

Doctrine of baptisms.

Laying on of hands.

Resurrection of the dead.

Eternal judgment.

And last but not least – “If God Permit”.

Any foundation must first be inspected and approved before the structure of the building can be erected. If the building inspector is indeed satisfied, he approves of it by using a stamp of authority. Similarly, Adonai first needs to **permit** (*approve*) the restored foundation by using a signet ring as His stamp of approval!

MATURITY

Is it sufficient for my salvation to believe with my heart and confess with my mouth that Christ is my Saviour?

For with the heart one believes unto righteousness and with the mouth one confesses unto salvation.

Romans 10:10 MKJV

This is where most believers are being misled. Believing and confessing are only the starting point. The moment we believe in our hearts and confess with our mouths, we do indeed make it unto salvation, but we are still immature and on milk.

For everyone partaking of milk is unskillful in the Word of Righteousness, for he is still an infant. Hebrews 5:13 MKJV

Paul says we have become too dull to understand. It is mostly our human traditions that stand in the way of understanding and growing to maturity.

We have much to say about this topic although it is difficult to explain, because you have become too dull and sluggish to understand. ¹² For you should already be professors instructing others by now; but instead, you need to be taught from the beginning the basics of God's prophetic oracles! You're like children still needing milk and not yet ready to digest solid food. ¹³ For every spiritual infant who lives on milk is not yet pierced by the revelation of righteousness. ¹⁴ But solid food is for the mature, whose spiritual senses perceive heavenly matters. And they have been adequately trained by what they've experienced to

emerge with understanding of the difference between what is truly excellent and what is evil and harmful.

Hebrews 5:11-14 TPT

God's breath will empower us to receive His instructions and corrections and will bring us to godliness. Godliness is to be like God – fully mature and perfectly prepared to fulfil any assignment.

God has transmitted his very substance into every Scripture, for it is God-breathed. It will empower you by its instruction and correction, giving you the strength to take the right direction and lead you deeper into the path of godliness. ¹⁷ Then you will be God's servant, fully mature and perfectly prepared to fulfill any assignment God gives you. 2 Timothy 3:16-17 TPT

By the time we reach this point of full maturity, we should never be drawn into meaningless arguments. Such arguments only bring more division into the Body of Christ, and we need to avoid this at all costs.

Be committed to teach the believers all these things when you are with them in the presence of the Lord. Instruct them to never be drawn into meaningless arguments, or tear each other down with useless words that only harm others. 2 Timothy 2:14 TPT

As Adonai's servants, we need to show great patience to the immature. Instead of being argumentative, we should help others see the truth.

*For a true servant of our Lord Jesus will not be argumentative but gentle toward all and skilled in helping others see the truth, **having great patience toward the immature.** ²⁵ Then with meekness you'll be able to*

carefully enlighten those who argue with you so they can see God's gracious gift of repentance and be brought to the truth. ²⁶ ***This will cause them to rediscover themselves and escape from the snare of Satan who caught them in his trap so that they would carry out his purposes.*** 2 Timothy 2:23-25 TPT

This scripture holds the key to the very first doctrinal principle found in the Bible. It will be discussed under "Repentance and Dead Works".

ON A ROCK

The only way to reach spiritual maturity is to ensure that the foundation of the house is built on a rock. This is not just any rock, but the cliff – the "**Petra Rock**". As discussed in Part 1, Peter declared that Christ was the Messiah, and on that Rock, "**Petra**", we must build the temple. The pattern for laying down the foundation is hidden in this principle. Note the following four important aspects which is part of laying down the foundation of our temples.

- First, there was a **confrontation** when Yashuah asked, "Who do you say I am?"
- Then followed a **revelation** when, under the influence of the Holy Spirit, Peter declared Christ was the Messiah.
- Peter responded with an **acknowledgment**. Very important that he did not quench the Holy Spirit by refusing the acknowledgment but embraced it.
- Then, Peter made a public **confession** of his faith.

We have confidence that this “**temple**” will stand and last when the storm comes, because of Jesus’ promise.

*He who comes to me and **hears** my words and **do** it (acts on them) is like a person building a house, who dug a deep hole to lay the foundation on **rock**. When the storm comes, and pushed against that house but couldn’t shake it, because it had been founded on the rock. Luke 6:47-48*

The opposite is therefore also true. He who does not **HEAR** and does not **DO** and does not **dig deep**, when the storm comes, his house will surely collapse.

The word used in Luke 6 for rock is “**petra**” and it refers to “The Rock”, Yashuah HaMashiach. What Christ was saying to Peter and His disciples was, “Based on the revelation which you have received of who I am, on that revelation will I build my ecclesia.”

Yehôvâh Elohim wants sons and daughters for Himself. We are all born from a corruptible seed and need a born-again experience. This time from an incorruptible seed. He adopted us, and when the Holy Spirit abides in us, we cry out, “ABBA FATHER!”, that is “Daddy!” (Romans 8:15; Galatians 4:6). To enable us to grow unto full maturity, we need a strong, deep foundation. This can only be done when we preach Christ and bring every person into full understanding of the truth.

Christ is our message! We preach to awaken hearts and bring every person into the full understanding of truth. It has become my inspiration and passion in ministry to labor with a tireless intensity, with his power flowing through me, to present to every believer the revelation of being his perfect one in Jesus Christ. Colossians 1:28-29 TPT

Only now can the entire building be erected and continually grow until it rises up unto completion. What an amazing statement Paul made to the Ephesians that the Holy Spirit would transform every one of us into the Holy of Holies – His dwelling place!

"This entire building is under construction and is continually growing under his supervision until it rises up completed as the holy temple of the Lord himself. ²² This means that God is transforming each one of you into the Holy of Holies, his dwelling place, through the power of the Holy Spirit living in you!"

Ephesians 2:21-22 TPT

Before we can be transformed into the Holy of Holies, we need to lay down the foundation. Only then can the building, which is under construction, reach full completion. This is when we, *the Temple of Adonai*, are transformed into the Holy of Holies where Yashuah HaMashiach can dwell permanently.

1. REPENTANCE OF DEAD WORKS

*Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of **repentance** from dead works, and of **faith** toward God, ² Of the doctrine of **baptisms**, and of **laying on of hands**, and of **resurrection** of the dead, and of eternal **judgment**. ³ And this will we do, if God **permit**.*

Hebrews 6:1-3 KJV

This is our main text. Faith toward God can follow only after repentance of dead works. It is a pity that the importance and true meaning of

repentance are not clearly explained in the Body of Christ. If we do not meet Christ in repentance, we will most definitely meet Him in judgment!

Anything we do without faith is considered dead works. I think we can assume that 98% of all human work is the result of self-effort. The Bible teaches that all self-effort is dead works because it does not originate from faith. Without faith, it is impossible to please God.

*And it is **impossible to please God without faith.***

Anyone who wants to come to him must believe that God exists and that he rewards those who sincerely seek him.

Hebrews 11:6 NLT

A shocking truth is that we are under a curse when we act in self-righteousness and self-effort!

*For as many as are out of works of the law, **these are under a curse**; for it is written, 'Cursed is everyone who does not continue in all things which are written in the Book of the Law, to do them.'* Galatians 3:10 MKJV

If you, for example, take pride in the success of your business because of your own efforts and plans, you must repent of dead works to come out from under that curse. I was deceived for many years to accomplish everything on my own. Then God revealed this profound Biblical truth to me.

Having begun in the Spirit, do you now perfect yourself in the flesh? Galatians 3:3 MKJV

We often begin our newborn life in the spirit but somewhere along the line become focused on the self and self-efforts and try to achieve perfection in the flesh.

*O foolish Galatians, who **bewitched** you not to obey the truth, to whom before your eyes Jesus Christ was written among you crucified? Galatians 3:1 MKJV*

Being “bewitched” means that someone has cast a spell on you. We have been bewitched to ignore Christ’s work on the cross and thus nullify Adonai’s mercy and grace and we dilute His Blood by adding fleshly attempts to it.

**Christ cried out on Calvary,
“It is done! Tetelestai! It is Finished!”
Nothing can be added!**

We need to believe that Yehôvâh Elohim exists and that He has already paid the full price for us. The Christian life is a walk of faith. Any effort, task, assignment, or action we take must originate from faith. This is the only way to please Adonai.

REPENTANCE

The first doctrinal stone listed is repentance, and the last is judgment. If we do not willingly meet Adonai in repentance, we will surely meet Him in judgment. Repentance is the birth canal for salvation.

Repentance in Greek is “**metanoia**”. It means a “**change of the mind**”, a complete conversion, a turn, a change of behaviour, or a new course; a completely altered view of life and behaviour. The Hebrew meaning of

repentance is “**teshuvah**”, which means “**to turn around**”. When we combine these definitions, we get a complete picture of the meaning of repentance: “**To turn around and walk in a new direction, on a new course, with a renewed mind.**”

Paul warns us to not be conformed to this world but to be transformed by the renewing of our minds.

And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, in order to prove by you what is that good and pleasing and perfect will of God.

Romans 12:2 MKJV

Some people mistake repentance for an act of emotion, but it is merely a choice. It springs from the will and not from the emotions. Emotional repentance results in falling back into the old ways. An emotional experience does not last because the “**will**” did not change. Renewing of the mind suggests an intellectual act. It means we think differently, which brings about a change in our behaviour and results in bearing the fruit of the Spirit. This will be the evidence of true repentance.

FAITH AND REPENTANCE

Faith follows repentance, as proven by this scripture.

The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God draws near. Repent, and believe the gospel. Mark 1:15 MKJV

Luke recorded twice that we must repent so as to not perish (Luke 13:3, 5). The opening statements of both Christ and John the Baptist were to repent.

Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.

(Matthew 3:2; Matthew 4:17; Mark 1:15; Mark 6:12;
Luke 13:3, 5)

When 120 men started praying in tongues after the Holy Spirit had been outpoured on them in the upper room, the people surrounding them were cut to the heart, asking, "*What shall we do?*"

*Then Peter said to them, **Repent and be baptized**, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ to remission of sins, and you shall receive the **gift of the Holy Spirit**.*
Acts 2:38 MKJV

My heart is broken because deception in our churches withholds many from entering the Kingdom of Heaven. Peter is clear that we must "*Repent, be baptized and receive the gift!*" The Messiah longs to freely give us the most precious gift – the gift of the Holy Spirit! Yet most believers live their daily lives without Him.

Therefore repent and convert so that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord. Acts 3:19 MKJV.

**Those who struggle in their faith have possibly
never met the conditions of repentance.**

The necessity and meaning of true repentance have never been explained to me by any church leader. God revealed it to me. I am a living witness that, after repentance, my life radically changed for the good, and I experienced Godly breakthroughs.

When ministering to the broken-hearted, I realise just how many people are exhausted from struggling through life because of broken

relationships, financial problems, strife, envy, jealousy, rebellion, stubbornness and many more. They say they have forgiven those who wronged them, but they are still living in resentment and unforgiveness.

True repentance happens when we meet our Lord in the Courts of Heaven, where the prosecutor, satan, accuses us of our weaknesses and sins day and night. After we have truly repented, Christ, our Redeemer, applies His Blood to our indictment. Only then can satan's legal rights in our lives be cancelled, and we can escape the snare of the devil.

For the accuser of our brothers and sisters, who accuses them before our God day and night, has been hurled down. Revelation 12:10b NIV

As soon as the broken-hearted repent, changes become visible in their lives. Miracles of physical healing follow, confirmed by amazed physicians, agreeing that the healing could only be a miracle. Relationships are restored, new business opportunities break through, and broken souls are healed. I encourage you to follow these steps of repentance. They are the key to unlocking heavenly blessings.

- In an audible voice, **forgive** those who hated you, cheated on you, robbed you, talked about you, criticised you, abandoned you, used you, rejected you, hated you, betrayed you, deceived you and neglected you.
- Give up the **resentment** (*bitter indignation at having been treated unfairly*) towards those you have just forgiven.
- **Bless** them with heavenly blessings and with a life of abundance.
- Now release **resurrection power**, which is Dunamis Power, in and over your soul and immune system. Declare and

decree that they are strong and excellent. This is deemed necessary for the next step.

- **Bind the strongman** and summon him to pay back sevenfold what he has stolen.

But if he is found, he shall restore sevenfold; he shall give all the goods of his house. Proverbs 6:31 KJV

- We should never judge others, for no man has the true facts or knows the conditions of another person's heart. We ask the Righteous Judge for **justice and righteousness**.

What I teach you today is trustworthy and true! I guarantee freedom and blessings when you sincerely follow these steps.

Repentance is God's requirement for entering His Kingdom and living a life of abundance!

*And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to **repent**:³¹ Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.³² And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear thee again of this matter. Acts 17:30-32 KJV*

THE SNARE OF SATAN

Satan keeps us in his snare of deception because of our lack of knowledge. Once the veil has been lifted from our spiritual eyes by grace, we need to be patient with those who are still captive and immature. With meekness the mature need to help the immature to see the truth.

*For a true servant of our Lord Jesus will not be argumentative but gentle toward all and skilled in helping others see the truth, **having great patience toward the immature.** ²⁵ Then with meekness you'll be able to carefully enlighten those who argue with you so they can see God's gracious gift of repentance and be brought to the truth. ²⁶ This will cause them to rediscover themselves and escape from the snare of Satan who caught them in his trap so that they would carry out his purposes.*

2 Timothy 2:24-26 TPT

Adonai gives us the "gift of repentance" to bring us to the truth. When we embrace the truth, we will be able to escape the snare of Satan who caught us in his trap.

SICKNESSES AND DISEASES

The topic of sicknesses and diseases is a complete teaching on its own, but the concept is worth mentioning here. Adonai is not the author of confusion, nor of sicknesses and diseases. Satan is the one who steals, kills, and destroys, but Yehôvâh Elohim gives life so we may have it more abundantly (John 10:10).

Paul teaches that there are many voices, and each has meaning.

There are, I suppose, many different languages in the world, yet none of them is without meaning.

1 Corinthians 14:10 ISV

How sad that we listen to these voices, give them meaning and dwell on them so much that, over time, they manifest in our personalities and bodies. When these voices have meaning to us, we are ensnared by the devil. To Paul, these voices were foreign and meant nothing.

...but to me they mean nothing. A person talking to me in one of these languages will be a stranger to me and I will be a stranger to him. 1 Corinthians 14:11 TLB

Let me explain how these “voices” operate. A voice whispers that someone has said nasty things about you. Then, you dwell on the thought and distance yourself from that person. Soon, resentment and unforgiveness set in. This puts you in torment (Matthew 18:34). When you dwell on this voice over a period, the hypothalamus gland picks up the conflict between the soul and the spirit. The spirit originates from heaven and has no understanding of resentment and unforgiveness, in contrast with the soul that operates from the fleshly realm of the old Adam. This brings conflict between the soul and spirit. The hypothalamus gland is responsible for the regulation of hormones throughout the body. Long-term over- or under-secretion of these hormones, because of stressful conflict, is what brings about sicknesses and diseases.

How ironic that some believe sickness and disease are from God, but at the same time visit the doctor for healing.

You hypocrite!

How dare you interfere with God's will for your life by going to a doctor if you believe He is the author of your sicknesses and diseases!

In his book "*A More Excellent Way, Be in Health*", Dr Henry W. Wright says that we sometimes pray to God for years to heal a sick person, while God's will for us is to be released from the snare of Satan who caused the sickness in the first place. Diseases can sometimes be the result of a separation from Him and His Word in specific areas of our lives because of disobedience to His will. That area is where Satan keeps us in captivity. When a specific disease manifests in your physical body, it indicates the area of separation from Adonai in your life. We often need to be **sanctified** in these certain areas of our lives before being healed.

The beginning of healing from spiritually rooted diseases is making peace with Adonai, accepting His love and accepting ourselves and others.

Although we have made it unto salvation, few are willing to go through the process of **sanctification**. Yashuah demonstrated this concept to His disciples when He washed their feet. He told them He did not need to wash their whole body as they had already made it unto salvation. He only needed to wash their feet, which was a symbolic act of **sanctification**.

In this healing ministry, the challenge is often to identify the area of separation and lead the person to the **truth**, e.g., the spiritual root of the sickness could be because of the unloving spirit. When you feel unloved, rejected, and abandoned, there is a lack of nurturing in the bloodline. The **truth** is, Adonai promised He would never leave you nor

forsake you (Deuteronomy 31:6). Through God's gracious gift of repentance, the sick is brought to the **truth**, and this will help them rediscover themselves and escape from the snare of Satan who caught them in the trap of the unloving spirit.

I trust you understand that faith in the works of Adonai follows repentance. I daily experience how people's faith is stirred up and how they receive their deliverance from the snare of the devil after they have repented. Healing flows because of repentance. If we do not set this stone of "**repentance**" into our foundation, the building will be unstable.

Paul warns us against listening to voices and he also gives us the weapons to deal with them.

*For although we live in the natural realm, we don't wage a military campaign employing human weapons, using manipulation to achieve our aims. Instead, our **spiritual weapons** are energized with divine power to effectively dismantle the defenses behind which people hide. ⁵ We can demolish every deceptive fantasy that opposes God and break through every **arrogant attitude** that is raised up in defiance of the true knowledge of God. We capture, like prisoners of war, **every thought** and insist that it bow in obedience to the Anointed One. ⁶ Since we are armed with such dynamic weaponry, we stand ready to punish any trace of rebellion, as soon as you choose complete obedience. 2 Corinthians 10:3-6 TPT*

Through many voices, the devil establishes strongholds *that become part of our personalities*. The Living Bible Translation teaches not to use manmade weapons to knock down the **devil's strongholds**, but God's

mighty weapons. These weapons, Paul says, can break down every proud argument against God and every wall blocking us from finding, knowing, and seeing the truth.

*(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of **strongholds**;)*

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every **thought** into the obedience of Christ.

2 Corinthians 10:4-5 KJV

Notice the link between strongholds and imaginations. The Passion Translation refers to them as thoughts. We must bring them into captivity under the obedience of Adonai.

CHANGING YOUR MIND

Most spiritual problems are because we have never truly repented and changed our minds. We have never made a sincere decision to surrender ourselves to the Lordship of Yashuah HaMashiach. We have never laid down our “will”. What an example set for us in the Garden of Gethsemane when Yashuah prayed to the Father.

And going a little farther, He threw Himself upon the ground on His face and prayed saying, My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass away from Me; nevertheless, not what I will [not what I desire], but as You will and desire.

Matthew 26:39 AMPC

Jesus could not bear to carry all the sins, iniquities, and transgressions of the world upon Himself. But He laid down His will and accepted the will of the Father. He set an example for us to lay down our will for Him.

BEING DOUBLE-MINDED

Many believers are unstable in all their ways. They are schizophrenic and, in a spiritual sense, have split personalities. They try to please Adonai by going to church but for the rest of the week, they live a self-pleasing life. The Word of God calls this double-mindedness.

He is a double-minded man, unstable in all he undertakes.

James 1:8 ISV

When we constantly doubt and walk in unbelief, we are like a wave of the sea that is driven and tossed by the wind. Such a person will not receive anything from Adonai.

But he must ask in faith, without any doubts, for the one who has doubts is like a wave of the sea that is driven and tossed by the wind. ⁷For do not let that man think that he shall receive anything from the Lord. James 1:6-7 ISV

It is not so much about having a lack of faith, but rather about getting rid of unbelief!

Don't just listen to the Word of Truth and not respond to it, for that is the essence of self-deception. So always let his Word become like poetry written and fulfilled by your life! James 1:22 TPT

Disobeying the Word of God seems to be self-deception.

If you listen to the Word and don't live out the message you hear, you become like the person who looks in the mirror of the Word to discover the reflection of his face in the beginning. ²⁴ You perceive how God sees you in the mirror of the Word, but then you go out and forget your divine origin. ²⁵ But those who set their gaze deeply into the perfecting law of liberty are fascinated by and respond to the truth they hear and are strengthened by it—they experience God's blessing in all that they do!
James 1:23-25 TPT

For the believer, seeing the man “**in the mirror**” is perceiving how God sees us, even from the beginning, before the fall of Adam, which resulted in sin's devastation to human hearts. The man in the mirror is the new creation man.

We all fall short of seeing the new creation man in the mirror because the devil constantly reminds us of the past, of the old man in the flesh. This is double-mindedness.

It wasn't that long ago that you lived in the religion, customs, and values of this world, obeying the dark ruler of the earthly realm who fills the atmosphere with his authority, and works diligently in the hearts of those who are disobedient to the truth of God. ³ The corruption that was in us from birth was expressed through the deeds and desires of our self-life. We lived by whatever natural cravings and thoughts our minds dictated, living as rebellious children subject to God's wrath like everyone else. ⁴ But God still loved us with such great love. He is so rich in compassion and mercy. ⁵ Even when we were dead

and doomed in our many sins, he united us into the very life of Christ and saved us by his wonderful grace! ⁶ He raised us up with Christ the exalted One, and we ascended with him into the glorious perfection and authority of the heavenly realm, for we are now co-seated as one with Christ! Ephesians 2:2-6 TPT

GRACE AND MERCY

Let us not boast by believing that anything comes from ourselves. Through His grace and mercy, God delivered us from the old sinful nature.

As for me, may I never boast about anything except the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ. Because of that cross, my interest in this world has been crucified, and the world's interest in me has also died. Galatians 6:14 NLT

*This entire building is under construction and is continually growing under **his supervision** until it rises up completed as the holy temple of the Lord himself. ²² This means that God is transforming each one of you into the Holy of Holies, his dwelling place, through the power of the Holy Spirit living in you! Ephesians 2:21-22 TPT*

Let us not grieve or quench the Holy Spirit by preventing Him from working in our lives (1 Thessalonians 5:19, Ephesians 4:30; Acts 7:51).

For the flesh sets its desire against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one

another, so that you may not do the things that you please.

Galatians 5:17 NASB

It is the flesh and the will that are rebelling. The flesh must die. Laying down our will is the sign of a crucified flesh.

But they rebelled And grieved His Holy Spirit; Therefore He turned Himself to become their enemy, He fought against them. Isaiah 63:10 NASB

LIVING STONES

We are living stones, joined together as a building to be occupied by the Lord.

So, keep coming to him who is the Living Stone—though he was rejected and discarded by men but chosen by God and is priceless in God's sight. ⁵ Come and be his "living stones" who are continually being assembled into a sanctuary for God. For now, you serve as holy priests, offering up spiritual sacrifices that he readily accepts through Jesus Christ. ⁶ For it says in scripture: Look! I lay a cornerstone in Zion, a chosen and priceless stone! And whoever believes in him will certainly not be disappointed.

1 Peter 2:4-6 TPT

Yehôvâh Elohim is the foundation of the Universe and of your temple. He is the precious Cornerstone of the building. What He requires of us is to REPENT. Through our repentance, the Blood of the Lamb flows, not only to cleanse and sanctify us, but to cancel all legal rights satan has in our bloodlines. Then, we are set free from the snare of the devil.

And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

Acts 20:32 KJV

This message of repentance is so important that Christ commanded the churches in the Book of Revelation to repent (KJV).

*Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and **repent**, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.* Revelation 2:5

***Repent**; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.* Revelation 2:16

*And I gave her space to **repent** of her fornication; and she repented not.* Revelation 2:21

*Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they **repent** of their deeds.* Revelation 2:22

*Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and **repent**. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.* Revelation 3:3

FALSE REPENTANCE

We tend to believe that repentance is an experience of deep sorrow or regret. I have seen many believers constantly asking forgiveness with tears, only to continue doing the very same wrong things.

The Greek word used when Judas realised he had betrayed the Messiah (Matthew 27) is "**metamelomai**". It means "**profound sorrow**", engulfed in grief, swallowed in regret. This is not the same word for repentance, which is "**metanoia**", meaning a "**change of the mind**". The Hebrew word for repentance is "**teshuvah**", which means "**to turn around**".

JUDAS

*Then Judas, who had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, **repented** ^{G3338} and returned the thirty pieces of silver to the princes of the priests and the elders.*

Matthew 27:3 JUB

G3338 (Strong's)

metamellomai

met-am-el'-lom-ahee

From G3326 and the middle of G3199; to care afterwards, that is, regret: - repent (self).

Judas never renewed his mind or turned around. He never made a decision for Christ. He was merely filled with grief, sorrow, and regret. Judas had passed the point of no return. Rick Renner explains the deeper meaning in Greek. It is like an animal that has lost its way and cannot get back home. It cannot return to its owner. Likewise, many

people feel sorry about their wrong deeds and repent of them, but never change their ways. They lose their way back to their First Love.

Repentance is not a matter of experiencing deep sorrow, as Judas did, but of making a sincere decision, led by the Holy Spirit, to turn around and renew the mind. Many merely make a momentary decision urged by emotions because they feel bad about their sins, but their lives never show the appropriate fruit. They never execute their decision to make a radical change in their lives. It is not a matter of feeling bad, but of a decision to consciously repent. Then the Holy Spirit starts His work of sanctification. Salvation is a once-off event, but sanctification needs to take place daily.

Rick Renner's experience of repentance.

Rick Renner tells how he, as a five-year-old boy, went to the pulpit to repent of his sin and accept Jesus as Lord and Saviour of his life. He saw older people approaching the pulpit with many emotions, shedding tears in their repentance. Soon, Rick noticed that those people did not attend church anymore and when he saw them several months later, there was no proof of any change in their lives.

When repentance sprouts from emotions, it may not lead to a renewed mind and a turning away from the old ways. The decision should sprout from the will.

We will see permanent conversions if people would repent as a definite act of their will!

The most critical moment in our lives is that instance Adonai urges us to repent. There may never be another chance!

ESAU

Esau despised God. He never repented. His fleshly desires were more important to him than God's spiritual requirements.

(Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person like Esau, who for one morsel of food sold his birthright. ¹⁷ For you know that afterward, when he desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected; for he did not find any place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.)

Hebrews 12:16-17 MKJV

These are hard words, my beloved reader. With tears, Esau desired an opportunity to repent but it was too late. This is what Romans 1 warns us about. Those who persist in their wrong ways will reach a point where Adonai will give them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their hearts. Because they do not retain God in their knowledge, He will give them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient (Romans 1:24, 28). A reprobate mind is the Greek word "**adokimos**", meaning a "**degraded mind**", perverse understanding, rejected, by implication worthless, castaway. God reprobates the unrepentant sinner. In other words, they reach the same point as Esau and Judas, which is the point of no return and no change. Their minds become reprobate and contaminated. If we stubbornly persist in rejecting the truth, God will give us over to believing the lie.

Do not reject the precious opportunity to repent!

THE NATURE OF REPENTANCE

The well-known parable of the prodigal son in the Gospel of Luke sheds better light on the nature of repentance.

This son took the portion of his goods and left his father's house. He spent it all, resulting in having to feed pigs to survive. For a Jew to feed swine was as low as a person could get.

**Sometimes we must reach that lowest point in life
before being willing to turn around.**

When he came to his senses and that "*moment of truth*" hit him, he realised he would be better off returning to his father's house. He was perishing in his current state of uncleanness among the pigs. The condition he was in, could be compared to the state of those in captivity by the snare of the devil!

And when he came to himself (the moment of truth), he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! ¹⁸ I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, ¹⁹ And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. ²⁰ And he arose, and came to his father.

Luke 15:17-20a JUB

The prodigal son acknowledged that he had wasted everything and decided to return to his father and turn his life around. This is the result of true repentance!

The beauty of the story lies in the deep truth of who our Father is. He is represented by the father who saw his returning son and had

compassion for him. He ran and fell on his neck and kissed him. Until then, he was most probably constantly on the lookout for the return of his lost son. Even before the son could express his guilt and unworthiness, the father brought out the best robe, put a ring on his finger, sandals on his feet and slaughtered the fattened calf to welcome him back. The ring on his finger and the sandals on his feet were a declaration that the father perceived him as his true son and not as a servant.

Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: ²³ And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: ²⁴ For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. Luke 15:22-24 KJV

The result of true repentance is being welcomed by the Father!

Without true repentance, our Christian life would be an up-and-down experience. It is a decision of the will to lay down this first foundation stone. An unrepentant life is responsible for most of our problems. Without repentance, our buildings will collapse!

Therefore, Saints, repentance comes before faith.

Do you desire to meet the Messiah? Then follow the command of John the Baptist, who prepared the way for the Messiah's appearance by saying, "*Repent ye for the kingdom of heaven is at hand*" (Matthew 3:2). Mark recorded, "*Repent ye and believe the gospel*" (Mark 1:13-15). Repentance comes first. We cannot come to Adonai without repenting first. Yashuah also made this clear after His resurrection.

And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. Luke 24:47 KJV

We often water down this serious message of repentance. By studying the Book of Acts, we see that no one claimed salvation without water baptism. Paul told the elders in Ephesians, both Jews and Greeks, that repentance toward God and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ are the key to our salvation (Acts 20:21). The point here is that Paul preached this message from house to house and he preached the same message in public and the synagogues. The message never changed.

And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house. Acts 20:20 KJV

Repentance is a doctrinal requirement.

Returning to God

All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. Isaiah 53:6 KJV

No one is righteous – not even one. Romans 3:10

Adonai requires repentance of us so we can turn around and be saved.

Come back, come back, O God, and restore us!
Psalm 80:7a TPT

O, God, the mighty Commander of Angel Armies, come back and rescue us! Psalm 80:19a TPT

Lamentations recorded the mourning of Jeremiah over the destruction of Jerusalem and stated the following in chapter 5:21.

Return us to You, O Jehovah, and we will turn; renew our days as of old. (MKJV)

Bring us back to You, Adonai, and we will return. Renew our days as of old. (TLV)

Derek Prince told how he had started a Bible Class with a few friends when they were in the army. One friend, who usually attended these classes approached Derek and asked to be excused from future classes as he was afraid that he might become converted. Many years later, Derek met with this person again, and he had turned into the most miserable person ever imagined because he had rejected the urge of the Spirit to repent and turn to God. He had reached the point of no return! When God speaks and we do not act and obey, we might find ourselves at the same point as Esau, Judas, and Derek Prince's friend. May we adhere to this foundational requirement of repentance before it is too late. Scripture is clear that when we reach that point of no return, we will perish.

I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Luke 13:3 KJV

Faith toward God

The second doctrinal requirement is "*faith toward Adonai*". This is not just any faith. It is faith toward Yehôvâh Elohim. Without this faith, it is impossible to please Adonai.

And without faith living within us it would be impossible to please God. For we come to God in faith knowing that he is real and that he rewards the faith of those who passionately seek him. Hebrews 11:6 TPT

The Greek word "**adynatos**" means "**impotent**" or "**powerless**". We are powerless to please God. Only faith pleases God. Therefore, anyone who approaches God must believe.

The Nature of Faith

We often pray for more faith, but the Word of God clearly states we have received "**the measure of faith**". This indicates the same amount for everyone (Romans 12:3 KJV).

Do you want your faith to grow? When we study and "eat" the Written Word of God, as explained in Part 1, faith increases.

So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. Romans 10:17 MEV

We need to hear and meditate on the Word of God. Only then can the Living Word of God manifest in our lives.

The Word of God is the only source of faith!

WHAT THEN IS FAITH?

Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen (Hebrews 11:1). The Greek word for "**substance**" is "**hupostasis**", which means a setting or placing under, a thing put under, substructure, foundation, that which has foundation, is firm, that

which has actual existence, the steadfastness of mind, courage, resolution, confidence, firm trust, and assurance.

Biblical faith is in the heart.

For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Romans 10:10 KJV

If faith is in the heart and in the present, then hope is in the mind and in the future. Be careful to not have these the wrong way round, as diverted hope brings on Alzheimer's disease. This is why the Word of God states that faith is the substance of things hoped for.

Many people hope for something to happen in the future but do not have faith that it will happen. Through my experience, I'd like to explain this as follows, realising that theologically it might not be one hundred per cent correct. If someone offered you a drink but did not have your favourite drink available, that person could offer you something else, also preferable to you. Your favourite Five Roses tea may be substituted with Rooibos tea. Likewise, we often substitute our hope with faith, so to speak. It is then our faith that brings the evidence of the things we cannot see. Although the breakthrough, or restored relationship, may not yet be visible, by walking in faith, we can already see it manifested. The only way to please God is through faith in Him.

It is crucial to understand that when Adonai declares we are healed by His stripes (Isaiah 53:5), it means that healing has already been provided. Why are we still sick? Because the thief, satan, has stolen it from us!

When a person deals with the spiritual roots of a specific sickness and repents for being separated from Adonai in that area, he can then release faith and make a declaration, "***By His stripes I am healed.***"

Faith sees the unseen and brings evidence of things not seen! You cannot see healing yet but have evidence that it has already been provided. One day you will wake up with the manifestation of a healed body and soul, restored relationships, and a restored life **because you released faith toward Adonai! You walked in faith and saw the future as if it already existed!**

Hope is the helmet which protects the head and the mind, but faith is the breastplate that protects the heart.

But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of salvation. 1 Thessalonians 5:8 KJV

Faith can take us beyond the realm of the visible, "*for we walk by faith, not by sight!*" It is through faith that we understand the worlds were framed by the word of God so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear (2 Corinthians 5:7). We first confess our faith and then we have hope. Many are trapped by diverted hope because faith was not confessed. Hope comes after the release and declaration of our faith in Yehôvâh Elohim.

OUR FAITH WILL BE TESTED

The Christian life is one of trials, persecution, rejection, and tests. Our faith can only grow and become stronger when it is tested.

My fellow believers, when it seems as though you are facing nothing but difficulties, see it as an invaluable opportunity to experience the greatest joy that you can! ³ For you know that when your faith is tested it stirs up in you the power of endurance. ⁴ And then as your endurance grows even stronger, it will release perfection into every part of your being until there is nothing missing and nothing lacking. James 1:2-4 TPT

During these tests and trials, we learn to endure, and we grow stronger, so when the storm comes, the building will last and not be unstable. When we are being tested, we go through the same process as silver and gold when it is being purified by fire. Our faith goes through the fire of purification.

That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ. 1 Peter 1:7 KJV

FAITH RELATES US TO OUR HIGH PRIEST

Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostle and high priest of our profession, Christ Jesus. Hebrews 3:1 KJV

Our High Priest is indeed in touch with all our feelings.

Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. ¹⁵ For we have not an high priest which cannot

be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin. ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.
Hebrews 4:14-16 KJV

WHAT IF MY PRAYERS SEEM TO BE UNANSWERED?

Waiting long for a prayer to be answered can be very exhausting. Sometimes we reach a point where we want to give up. I know! While horse riding one day, I cried out to God in a loud voice, “*I cannot take it anymore, Lord! Please send Elijah’s chariots of fire to take me home!*”

The author of Hebrews encourages us.

Cast not away {apoballo - throw away; to discard; or to get rid of something no longer desired, needed, or wanted} *therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward. ³⁶ For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise. ³⁷ For yet a little while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry. ³⁸ Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him. ³⁹ But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.*
Hebrews 10:35-39 KJV

We are warned to not cast away our confidence. The word “**cast away**” is “**apoballo**” in Greek. The same word is used in Mark 10. A blind man, Bartimaeus, was begging on the side of the road. He heard Jesus of

Nazareth passing by and cried out in a loud voice, "*Son of David, have mercy on me!*" The disciples tried to silence him, but he cried out even louder. "*Thou Son of David, have mercy on me!*" (Mark 10:46-48). Bartimaeus had been waiting for a very long time. Something was preventing him from receiving his sight.

*And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called.
And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good
comfort, rise; he calleth thee. ⁵⁰ And he, **casting away
his garment,** rose, and came to Jesus.*
Mark 10:49-50 KJV

When Jesus commanded Bartimaeus to come to Him, he cast away his garment. He cast away ("**apoballo**") what was preventing him from receiving his sight. Bartimaeus had to obey Jesus. He had to get up and go to Him. Let us, too, cast away the hindrances that are standing in our way of getting to Jesus!

*And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that
I should do unto thee? Mark 10:51a KJV*

**If Jesus were to ask you today what you desired Him to do for
you, what would your answer be?**

Bartimaeus knew exactly what he wanted from Jesus. "*Lord, that I might receive my sight*" (Mark 10:51b). Jesus's reply to Bartimaeus was, "*Go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way*" (Mark 10:52). Bartimaeus was bold in declaring his faith. He had a huge expectation that the Lord would indeed meet his need. He received his sight because his faith had made him whole! When your prayers seem to go unanswered, do not cast away your confidence, because there is indeed a great recompense of

reward awaiting you! Let us not be among those who withdraw from Him and miss our reward! **Look out, for payday is coming!** There will be a reimbursement, a settlement for the believers for their troubles. Don't forfeit it because of unbelief.

Hebrews 10 emphasises that we need patience. Don't be moved by unbelief, circumstances or what you see. We do not walk by sight but by faith! Keep your position, stand, and hold your ground. Maintain your territory as military troops do when the commander orders them to maintain their position in the face of fierce combat. We must defiantly stick it out, regardless of the pressure mounted against it. This means to hold out, hold on, outlast, persevere, hang in there, never give up, refuse to surrender to obstacles and turn down every opportunity to quit. It means refusing to break, surrender or bend under a heavy load because you are convinced that the territory, promise or principle under assault rightfully belongs to you. It means to show stamina and durability. It means to have a supernatural ability to continue fighting! Decide today to never give up! Stick to your faith! Don't surrender! Refuse to move! Stand and hold your ground! Hang on!

WHAT ARE YOU DECLARING?

Whatever you have confidently spoken, you will receive. Hebrews 10:37 says to hang on for just a little while longer, for payday is coming. You are on the edge of receiving. Do not withdraw or move away.

*But we are not of them who draw back unto **perdition**;
but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.*

Hebrews 10:39 KJV

The word “**perdition**” is the Greek word “**apoleia**”, which means *something ruined, rotten, and decomposing*. It is a word used to describe the stench of a decaying animal or a dead human body, something in the process of perishing, loathsome.

If you back off from your faith, you go into reverse and lose territory. Your life experience will become negative. We are not of them who draw back unto perdition! We are among those who believe and receive the promise we declare with confidence! Those who withdraw because of unbelief, create an unattractive and inaccurate image of Adonai.

And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive. Matthew 21:22 KJV

And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us:
1 John 5:14 KJV

FULL SALVATION

Faith brings full salvation. “**The Apocalypse of your Full Salvation**” is a full discussion on this topic. *(It is available on the Berashith Ministry website: www.berashithministry.co.za/index.php/products/personal-books)*

Through faith, we receive full salvation. You may believe you have made it unto salvation because you confessed with your mouth and believed in your heart! But this is the salvation of your spirit and only the beginning of your faith.

*Through our faith, the mighty power of God constantly guards us until our **full salvation** is ready to be revealed in the last time. ⁶ May the thought of this cause you to*

*jump for joy, even though lately **you've had to put up with the grief of many trials.**⁷ But these only reveal the sterling core of your faith, which is far more valuable than gold that perishes, for even gold is refined by fire. Your authentic faith will result in even more praise, glory, and honor when Jesus the Anointed One is revealed.⁸ You love him passionately although you have not seen him, but through believing in him you are saturated with an ecstatic joy, indescribably sublime and immersed in glory.⁹ For you are reaping the harvest of your faith—the full salvation promised you—your souls' victory!" 1 Peter 1:5-9 TPT*

Between verses 5 and 9, we find trials and persecutions which refine our faith by fire. Only then can we experience the sanctification of the soul. After sanctification, we reap the harvest of our faith, which is full salvation - "*even the salvation of your souls*" (1 Peter 1:9 KJV).

A PERSONAL RELATIONSHIP

When we have a solid personal relationship with Yashuah, we have complete confidence to approach Him in prayer. Prayer does not merely mean talking to Adonai. It is a two-way conversation. Do not simply present a shopping list to God and end off your requests with a satisfying "Amen!" God can easily deal with your list, but He is interested in YOU.

We are often ignorant of Biblical principles. When ministers teach us Biblical principles, we are dull of hearing.

Solomon understood God's ways. He knew the Biblical principles of giving. He went up to the brazen altar before the Lord, which was at the

Tabernacle of the congregation. He offered a thousand burnt offerings (2 Chronicles 1:6), although God required the sacrifice of only one bull. He gave more than required! That night, God appeared to him and said,

"ASK WHAT I SHALL GIVE THEE!"

God saw Solomon's heart and invited him to ask anything from God. He asked for wisdom. The Lord honoured his request and gave him also all the riches and wealth and honour such as no other king has ever had before, nor shall ever have in the future (2 Chronicles 1:12).

(For more information on this topic, download the book, "The Gift of Giving")

God will always speak through the Bible. Anything that does not line up with the Bible is not from God.

PRAYING IN THE NAME OF JESUS

One day, a good friend and I discussed the following scripture verse.

And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. ¹⁴ If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. John 14:13-14 KJV

Until then, both of us had been experiencing the opposite. Although we asked, we did not seem to receive. Today, I have a better understanding of this passage. Believers approach God with a shopping list. Although God wants to give us our heart's desires, He is far more interested in having a personal relationship with us. As I got to know God more intimately, I reached the point where my soul cries out, "I am satisfied! My soul is indeed saturated by Yehôvâh Elohim! I do not want anything

else. I am content!" Now I experience that when I ask anything in His name from this place of complete satisfaction, I receive!

And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. ²⁴ Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. John 16:23-24 KJV

We should come to Yashuah based on what Jesus did on our behalf. He paid the penalty for sin and took our iniquities on Him.

For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit. 1 Peter 3:18 KJV

But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. Ephesians 2:13 KJV

The Blood of Christ restores us and cries out a better covenant than the blood of Abel.

And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel. Hebrews 12:24 KJV

The BLOOD OF CHRIST always speaks on our behalf!

We come to the Father based on who Jesus is. That is why the personal foundation in Part 1 is so fundamental to the restoration of the temple.

Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, ²⁰ By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is

to say, his flesh; ²¹ And having an high priest over the house of God; ²² Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.
Hebrews 10:19-22 KJV

CHRIST OUR ADVOCATE

The earthly court system requires that we have an advocate in the high court. Likewise, we need an Advocate to present our case before the Father in the Heavenly Courts. Knowing that we are indeed guilty of a crime, we plead guilty. Our Advocate, Yashuah HaMashiach, stands in our place before the Father and the Righteous Judge accepts His Son's offering on the cross. He declares us free and "Not guilty!"

My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate {someone called to help us} with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. 1 John 2:1 KJV

Based on our relationship with Him, He adopts us as His children. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ!

According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: ⁵ Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, ⁶ To the praise

of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. Ephesians 1:4-6 KJV

We are completely accepted by Christ, but many voices from the devil tell us that we are rejected. He focuses on our sins and broken past and accuses us day and night. We listen to these voices and live in captivity, ensnared by the devil. We should instead accept the precious prize of freedom which the Son of God gave us on Calvary when He cried out, "Tetelestai! It is done!, It is finished!"

IN JESUS, WE CAN CLAIM EVERYTHING

*He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely **give us all things**? Romans 8:32 KJV*

Many believers claim that Philippians 4:19 is a promise that God will provide, but we must understand it in its context. "*My God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus*" was written to the Philippians, who were the only congregation that financially supported Paul's ministry from the beginning.

For I want you to know that the Philippian church was the only church that supported me in the beginning as I went out to preach the gospel. You were the only church that sowed into me financially, ¹⁶ and when I was in Thessalonica, you supported me for well over a year. Philippians 4:15-16 TPT

We reap what we sow. The Philippians sowed a seed in Paul's ministry, and he knew that his God would accordingly supply all their needs. The believer must release faith to receive from Adonai.

*For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him
Amen, unto the glory of God by us. 2 Corinthians 1:20 KJV*

FAITH AND WORKS

"Faith and works" can become very controversial. We should, however, not get involved in arguments and useless debates about works such as keeping laws and statutes. Unknowingly, we sometimes twist scriptures to support our opinions. It is not my aim to engage in such controversial debates but to help you lay down the foundation.

The following scripture is *the **ONLY foundational principle of the Christian faith***. Most often, we unconsciously add substances to it.

*And, brothers, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you have received, and in which you stand; by which you also are being kept safe, if you hold fast the word which I preached to you, unless you believed in vain. ³ For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received, that **Christ died for our sins**, according to the Scriptures, and that He was **buried**, and that He **rose again the third day** according to the Scriptures.*
1 Corinthians 15:1-3 MKJV

This is the message the disciples preached everywhere. The Messiah died for our sins, was buried, and rose again on the third day. The

ultimate proof is in the Written Word of God and not necessarily in the opinions of the eyewitnesses.

*We were not retelling some masterfully crafted legend when we informed you of the power and appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, for we saw his magnificence and splendor unveiled before our very eyes. ¹⁷ Yes, Father God lavished upon him radiant glory and honor when his distinct voice spoke out of the realm of majestic glory, endorsing him with these words: **This is my cherished Son, marked by my love. All my delight is found in him!** ¹⁸ And we ourselves heard that voice resound from the heavens while we were with him on the holy mountain. ¹⁹ And so we have been given the **prophetic word—the written message of the prophets, made more reliable and fully validated by the confirming voice of God on the Mount of Transfiguration.** And you will continue to do well if you stay focused on it. For this prophetic message is like a piercing light shining in a gloomy place until the dawning of a new day, when the Morning Star rises in your hearts. 2 Peter 1:16-19 TPT*

What a statement! Even though they were eyewitnesses of these events they had a more reliable and validated confirmation of the Messiah – the Written Word of God by the prophets! I hope you can grasp this! The Written Word of God, coming from the prophets of the Old Testament, is more reliable than their own reports as eyewitnesses!

The final authority is the Scriptures!

I am shocked over how quickly you have strayed away from the One who called you in the grace of

Christ. I'm astounded that you now embrace a distorted gospel! ⁷ That is a fake "gospel" that is simply not true. There is only one gospel—the good news of Christ! Yet you have allowed those who mingle law with grace to confuse you. ⁸ But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach a gospel different than the one we preached to you, let them be under God's curse! Galatians 1:6-8 TPT

Paul spent six chapters explaining this concept to the Galatians. (*Please download the booklet, "Isaac & Ishmael: Born from Free- and Slave Woman", from our website for free for a complete discussion on this topic.*)

Saints, when we accept these facts, righteousness will be imputed to us. Righteousness is not what we do but what we believe. Righteousness is to receive our "*right standing before our Father*". We must cease all our efforts and works. We cannot earn anything from Adonai. No human can do anything to change how God feels about us. The Holy Spirit led me to this revelation in the epistle of James.

*You perceive **how God sees you** in the mirror of the Word, but then you go out and forget your divine origin.*

James 1:24 TPT

We are easily prevented by satan from discovering this Biblical truth. In a footnote, the Passion Translation Bible explains the above verse as follows:

For the believer, seeing the man "in the mirror" is seeing how God sees us from the beginning, even before the fall of Adam which resulted in sin's devastation to human hearts. The man in the mirror is the new creation man.

My dear Friend, when we have made it unto salvation through faith, we are a new creation. Why do you want to go back to the old fleshly desires or add customs and rituals to Yashuah's finished work on the cross?

When people work, they earn wages. It can't be considered a free gift, because they earned it. ⁵ But no one earns God's righteousness. It can only be transferred when we no longer rely on our own works, but believe in the one who powerfully declares the ungodly to be righteous in his eyes. It is faith that transfers God's righteousness into your account! Romans 4:4-5 TPT

Read again how Paul refers to Abraham, the father of faith.

Because Abraham believed God's words, his faith transferred God's righteousness into his account.

Romans 4:3 TPT

We must stop our self-righteous works! We cannot earn anything from our own works. By grace, we are saved through faith. It is a gift God gave us, not of works, lest anyone should boast (Ephesians 2:8- 10).

The reason salvation comes through Him alone is that pride sets in the moment we add works in the hope of earning God's favor, and we start boasting. Legalistic people are, by nature, not very loving people. A good example is the Pharisees. They did not act out of love but wished to impose the law of Moses onto every offender. Yashuah, on the other hand, only demonstrated love to everybody who approached him. There is, of course, an important place for works in our lives but works should follow faith.

We have become his poetry, a re-created people that will fulfill the destiny he has given each of us, for we are joined

*to Jesus, the Anointed One. Even before we were born,
God planned in advance our destiny and the good works
we would do to fulfill it! Ephesians 2:10 TPT*

Paul is clear that we must first become a new creation through faith and then good works will follow.

FRUIT

Most believers find it difficult to understand that humanity cannot bear fruit. Andrew Murray once asked, "*Who is to be blamed when there is no fruit?*" The answer is, "**Christ alone**". How can that be?

Benny Hinn wrote:

"It is not our strength that produces life, but His. Just before the crucifixion, Jesus had a meal with His disciples and gave them one of the greatest lessons found in the Gospels. He told them that they were not the vine, and they were not the fruit—they were the branches. We are an outlet for God's power, not the power itself."

I am the true vine, and My Father is the vinedresser.

² Every branch in Me that does not bear fruit He takes away; and every branch that bears fruit He prunes, that it may bear more fruit. ³ You are already clean because of the word which I have spoken to you. ⁴ Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, neither can you, unless you abide in Me. ⁵ I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him, bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing. John 15:1–5 NKJV

God's purpose as the "vinedresser" is to keep the vine clean. The pruning of sin is not the result of our effort, but of His. All we are required to do is surrender. **Some Christians are struggling to bear fruit, but no branch has the power to make that happen. Jesus was saying, "You don't bear the fruit. I do. But I give you the privilege of carrying it.** The fruit is Mine. The vine is Mine. The branch is simply hooked onto Me. That's all."

Someone once asked me, "If God is doing all the work, then what is my job?" "To hang on!", I replied. The vine supplies life to the branches, and the branch has the privilege of carrying the fruit. In effect, our job is to become "fruit carriers".

Take a close look at what is attached to the branch. It is the fruit of the Holy Spirit, not of the flesh! We become the channel through which love, joy, peace, and all the other spiritual fruit are given to the world (Galatians 5:22-23).

What is the result of this branch-vine relationship? When we understand this concept and make the Lord the source of our lives, He answers our prayers.

If you abide in Me, and My words abide in you, you will ask what you desire, and it shall be done for you.

John 15:7 NKJV

"Without Me you can do nothing" (John 15:5). This is true before, during, and after salvation. The vine is strong and the branch is weak. But branches are what God uses to deliver His fruit to the world.

Hinn, Benny. The Blood Study Guide: Experience the Power to Transform You (pp. 165-167). Charisma House. Kindle Edition.

BORN FROM FREE- AND SLAVE WOMAN

In Genesis 16-21, the story of Isaac and Ishmael introduces us to Abram and Sarai, whose names God changed to Abraham and Sarah in Genesis 17. The “**h**” added to their names points to the “**hey**” in the Jewish alphabet, representing Elohim’s breath – His Ruach! It was as though Elohim breathed over them and a new life began for each.

Abraham and his family moved to Canaan from Mesopotamia. Old and childless, Sarah gave her Egyptian maid, Hagar, to Abraham, hoping that the couple would have a child with the maid. Hagar became pregnant, but her continued presence in their home became intolerable to Sarah, and she constantly complained to Abraham. He told her to do with Hagar as she wished. Sarah then mistreated Hagar, who escaped into the wilderness. There she was met by an angel of the Lord who told her to return to her mistress and submit to her authority. He said the Lord would greatly multiply her descendants so they would be innumerable for their multitude. God confirmed she was with child and would bear a son whom she was to call Ishmael, because the Lord had given heed to her affliction. He said Ishmael would be a wild ass of a man - his hand against every man, and every man’s hand against him, and he shall dwell over against all of his kinsmen. (Genesis 16:9-12).

In Genesis 17:7-27, God appeared to Abraham and instructed him to circumcise himself and all the males of his household. God further commanded that they should circumcise every newborn male on the eighth day of his life as a sign of the “eternal covenant” between God and the seed of Abraham. God then informed Abraham that, in one year, they would have a son, Isaac. Abraham was nearing his hundredth year, and Sarah was approaching the age of ninety. They had been married

for 75 childless years because Sarah was physically incapable of having children. By then, Abraham already had a son, Ishmael, born thirteen years earlier from Sarah's maidservant Hagar.

And God said, Sarah thy wife shall bear thee a son indeed, and thou shalt call his name Isaac: and I will establish my covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his seed after him. Genesis 17:19 KJV

Abraham's reaction to this divine promise was, "*If only Ishmael would live before You!*" (Genesis 17:18). Abraham seemed to wish that Ishmael would be his heir to continue his life's work and perpetuate his special relationship with God. God rejected Abraham's proposal. He reassured him Ishmael would indeed become a great people, "***but my covenant I shall establish with Isaac***" (Genesis 17:21). Only Isaac, the son he would have with Sarah, could be his true heir, and could father the people with whom God would enter into a covenant as His "kingdom of priests and a holy nation".

Over ten years after God's promise, Sarah became pregnant and gave birth to Isaac. When he was weaned, Abraham feted his weaning with a great celebration. Genesis 21:9 tells that, during this feast, "*Sarah saw the son of Hagar, the Egyptian, whom she had borne to Abraham, playing [metzachek] with her son Isaac.*" "**Metzachek**" is defined as "mocking and scoffing".

Ishmael was making fun of Isaac. Being the son of Hagar, the Egyptian, Ishmael was a servant making fun of his master. Some Rabbinical explanations claim that Ishmael spoke a language of idolatry, illicitness, or murder, but, Abraham would not tolerate such acts in his house since it was punishable by death or lashing. Rather, Ishmael was challenging

Isaac's right to the inheritance. Sarah was focused on the inheritance and insisted that he would not inherit with Isaac by demanding that Abraham send away both Ishmael and Hagar (Genesis 21:10), ensuring Ishmael's survival, because he would have been tenuous without his mother.

When God told Abraham to do as Sarah wished, he unhappily consented, provided them with bare provisions and the two were cast into the wilderness. When Hagar cried before God, a spring of water miraculously welled up in the desert and revived them. An angel appeared to confirm God's previous message that Ishmael would be the father of a great nation (Genesis 21:14-21).

The next time we read of Ishmael is when he and Isaac buried their father. The Bible lists Ishmael's twelve sons who survived him after his death at 137 years of age. (Genesis 25:9-18). The number twelve represents a sign of nationhood.

Note that God's insistence on Isaac being the progenitor of His chosen people tells us something very fundamental about the nature of our relationship with Him, for Ishmael and Isaac differed in two significant respects.

- Ishmael came into the world by natural means, while Isaac's birth was a supernatural event.
- Ishmael was circumcised at thirteen, the age of *daat* (awareness), whereas Isaac entered into the covenant of circumcision as an eight-day-old infant—an age at which a baby is not even aware of his surroundings, much less of its significance.

Ishmael represents a rational relationship with God, based upon a person's nature and understanding. Isaac represents a supernatural, supra-rational bond.

Abraham discerned many positive qualities in Ishmael and was prepared, even desirous, to see him as his heir. Yet. God insisted that his covenant with Abraham be perpetuated specifically through Isaac and Isaac's descendants—a people whose commitment to God would transcend the natural and the rational.

SLAVE AND FREE WOMAN

Over 2 000 years later, Paul writes:

*For it is written: Abraham had **two sons, the one out of the slave-woman, and one out of the free woman.***

*²³ But, indeed, he out of the **slave-woman has been born according to flesh**, and he out of the free woman through the promise; ²⁴ which things are being allegorized; for these are the **two covenants**, one indeed from Mount Sinai bringing forth to slavery, which is Hagar. ²⁵ For Hagar is Mount Sinai in Arabia, and answers to Jerusalem which now is, and is in slavery with her children. ²⁶ **But the Jerusalem from above is free, who is the mother of us all.** ²⁷ For it is written, "Rejoice, barren one not bearing; break forth and shout, you not travailing; for more are the children of the desolate than she having the husband."*

*²⁸ **But brothers, we, like Isaac, are children of promise.** ²⁹ But then even as he born according to flesh persecuted him born according to the Spirit, so it is also*

now. ³⁰ But what does the Scripture say? **"Cast out the slave-woman and her son; for in no way shall the son of the slave-woman inherit with the son of the free woman."** ³¹ Then, brothers, we are not children of a slave-woman, but of the free woman. Galatians 4:22-31 MKJV

WHAT IS PAUL TALKING ABOUT?

Throughout his epistle to the Galatians, Paul repeats the fact that there are two covenants, namely, the Old and the New Covenants. These two covenants are allegorised in the two sons of Abraham, namely, Isaac and Ishmael. The first son of Abraham with Hagar, Ishmael, represents the Old Covenant and the Ten Commandments given on Mount Sinai.

These two women and their sons express an allegory and become symbols of two covenants. The first covenant was born on Mt. Sinai, birthing children into slavery—children born to Hagar. ²⁵ For "Hagar" represents the law given at Mt. Sinai in Arabia. The "Hagar" metaphor corresponds to the earthly Jerusalem of today which is currently in bondage. Galatians 4:24-25 TPT

We all came into the world through and by natural means (*we all have a father and a mother*) and are born under the curse of slavery. Elohim requires a born-again experience to make us free.

*So it is with us. When we were juveniles we were **enslaved under the hostile spirits of the world.** ⁴ But when that era came to an end and the time of fulfillment had come,*

God sent his Son, born of a woman, [Every child has a mother; but for Jesus to be “born of a woman” meant there was no human father, no male counterpart. Jesus’ true Father is the Father of Eternity. No other child has had a virgin birth, “born of a woman,” except him. All the rest of us are born from a father and a mother.] *born under the written law* {Torah}. Galatians 4:3-4 TPT

The Hebraic Root Bible translated verse 4 as, “*But when the fullness of the time came, Elohim sent forth His Son, having come into being out of a woman, being subject to the Torah.*”

While they were there, the time came for her to have her baby,⁷ and she gave birth to her first child, a son. She wrapped him in strips of cloth and laid him in a feeding trough, because there was no place for them in the guest quarters. Luke 2:6-7 ISV

After eight days had passed, the infant was circumcised and named Jesus, the name given him by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.²² When the time came for their purification according to the Law of Moses, Joseph and Mary took Jesus up to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord,²³ as it is written in the Law of the Lord, “Every firstborn son is to be designated as holy to the Lord. Luke 2:21-23 ISV

Yet all of this was so that he would redeem and set free all those held hostage to the written law so that we would receive our freedom and a full legal adoption as his children. Galatians 4:5 TPT

The Hebraic Root Bible translated verse 5 as, *"That He might redeem the ones under (the penalty of breaking) the Torah, that we might receive the adoption of sons."*

Amazing that Sarah's pregnancy was a foreshadowing of Christ, who was born supernaturally by the Spirit? As Sarah was barren and became pregnant with Isaac, so Mary became pregnant with Jesus Christ.

Paul explains that Isaac, the son of the free woman, Sarah, was born supernaturally by the Spirit. In contrast, Ishmael, the son of the slave girl, was a child of the natural realm (Galatians 4:23). It seems to me most of us have the same Father, but we do not have the same mother. This contains a mystery. We need to be born from above – from the heavenly Jerusalem, which is our true mother. She is the Free Woman, birthing children into freedom. But there is also a mother who is birthing children into slavery – children born to Hagar. She represents the law given at Mount Sinai and the earthly Jerusalem of today. Out of the slave-woman, children have been born according to the flesh, and they are currently in bondage! (Galatians 4:23-25).

Both Mary and Sarah were barren women, and both burst forth with gladness to give birth to free children.

For it is written:

"Burst forth with gladness,

O barren woman with no children!

Break through with the shouts of joy and jubilee,

for you are about to give birth!

The one who was once considered desolate and barren

now has more children than the one who has a

husband!" Galatians 4:27 TPT

This is a typology fulfilled by the birth of Christ Jesus.

*So it is with us. When we were juveniles (young, teenage, immature, inexperienced) we were **enslaved** under the hostile spirits of the world. ⁴But when the time of fulfillment had come, **God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under the law.** ⁵Yet all of this was so that he would redeem and set **free those held hostage to the law** so that we would receive our freedom and a full legal adoption as his children. Galatians 4:3-5 TPT*

The above passage is profound. We are now sons and daughters of adoption by whom we cry out, "Daddy – Abba Father!"

Heirs with Christ

*Consequently, brothers, we are not—with respect to human nature, that is—under an obligation to live according to human nature. ¹³For if you live according to human nature, you are going to die, but if by the Spirit you continually put to death the activities of the body, you will live. ¹⁴**For all who are led by God's Spirit are God's children.** ¹⁵**For you have not received a spirit of slavery that leads you into fear again. Instead, you have received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, "Abba! Father!"** ¹⁶The Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are God's children. ¹⁷Now if we are children, we are heirs—heirs of God and co-heirs with the Messiah—if, in fact, we share in his sufferings in order that we may also share in his glory. Romans 8:12-17 ISV*

We are saved by grace through faith and not by doing anything. The nation of Israel is, however, still in bondage because they have not yet accepted the Messiah or their salvation. They are still under the bondage of the law and this bondage will only end when the Messiah returns and redeems Jerusalem (Zachariah 14). What a privilege we have to accept the Messiah, receive our salvation and be born from above into freedom! This is indeed grace!

*Now we're no longer living like slaves under the law, but we enjoy being God's very own sons and daughters! **And because we're his, we can access everything our Father has—for we are heirs of God through Jesus, the Messiah!*** Galatians 4:7 TPT

When we are born from above, from the free woman, we not only become His sons and daughters, but we also become His heirs. Our heritage is through Jesus, the Messiah, and not by keeping the law! It is very important to understand what Paul is trying to tell us! We cannot add anything to the Blood of the Lamb! Everything we are, everything we become, and everything we receive, is in Him and through Him.

*Before we knew God as our Father and we became his children, we were unwitting {**not aware of the full facts**} servants to the powers that be, which are nothing compared to God. ⁹ But now that we truly know him and understand how deeply we're loved by him, why would we, even for a moment, consider turning back to those weak and feeble principles of religion, as though we were still subject to them? {Footnote in HRB: "These were people who were before patterning pagan cultic practices and now came to faith in YHWH and are now known by YHWH and*

were turning back to the former pagan practices.”}
Galatians 4:8-9 TPT

Paul instructed the people of Thessalonica.

*You know what **instructions** we gave you through the Lord Jesus. ³ For it is God's will that you be sanctified: You must abstain from sexual immorality. ⁴ Each of you must know how to control his own body in a holy and honorable manner. ⁵ not with passion and lust like the gentiles who do not know God. 1 Thessalonians 4:2-5 ISV*

Why would we want to scrupulously observe rituals like special days, (Or “Sabbaths”), celebrations of the new moon, annual festivals, and sacred years? [There is no requirement for Gentiles to become like Jews and observe Jewish ordinances to draw closer to God. Our approach to God is always based on grace and faith in the Blood of Jesus Christ, the Lord of the Sabbath.] Galatians 4:10 TPT {The Hebraic Root Bible refers to the false worship of verse 8.}

I AM YOUR SABBATH REST – Yashuah HaMashiach

Paul was the apostle who preached the Good News to the Gentiles. His message announced their freedom in Christ Jesus. Throughout his epistles, he emphasised this and was adamant that they should not allow anyone to mislead them back into slavery.

I’m so alarmed about you that I’m beginning to wonder if my labor in ministry among you was a waste of time! Galatians 4:11 TPT

PAUL'S PERSONAL APPEAL

Beloved ones, I plead with you, follow my example and become free from the bondage of religion. I once became as one of you, [Or "imitated you". Paul is using sarcasm when he says, "I imitated you; now you should imitate me!"] a gentile, when I lived among you—now become free like me. When I first came to minister to you, you did me no wrong. I can't believe you would do wrong to me now!
Galatians 4:12 TPT

AN OLD TESTAMENT ALLEGORY

In his epistle to the Galatians, Paul explains that Christ came to fulfil the law. Our freedom is now in Him, Christ Jesus the Anointed One. Why would we want to go back again to live strictly by the law?

Tell me, do you want to go back to living strictly by the law? Galatians 4:21 TPT

The HBR translated this verse as, **"I say to you, those that desire to let themselves be under (the penalty of) the Torah, do you not hear the Torah?"**

*Haven't you ever listened to what the law really says? Have you forgotten that Abraham had two sons; one by the slave girl, and the other by the free woman? {See Genesis 16:15; 21:2}. ²³ Ishmael, the son of the slave girl, was a child of the natural realm. But Isaac, the son of the free woman, was born supernaturally by the Spirit—a child of the promise of God! ²⁴ **These two women and their sons***

express an allegory and become symbols of two covenants. *The first covenant was born on Mt. Sinai, birthing children into slavery—children born to Hagar {Genesis 21:10-14}. ²⁵For "Hagar" represents the law given at Mt. Sinai in Arabia. The "Hagar" metaphor corresponds to the earthly Jerusalem of today which is currently in bondage. (This is because the nation has not accepted salvation yet. This bondage will end when Messiah returns and redeems Jerusalem, as written in Zechariah 14.) ²⁶In contrast, there is a heavenly Jerusalem above us, {Revelation 21:1-2} which is our true "mother." She is the free woman, birthing children into freedom! Galatians 4:21b-26 TPT*

Paul is showing that the **law is a system of works that brings bondage** and that the promise is a system of grace that brings true freedom. He quotes Isaiah's prophecy.

"Sing, you barren woman, even the one who never bore a child! Burst into song and shout for joy, even you who were never in labor! For the children of the desolate woman will be more than the children of her that is married," says the LORD. Isaiah 54:1 ISV

Paul discusses this in 2 Corinthians 3. The reason the Sinai covenant brought bondage was that it had no avenue by which sins could be paid for and removed. Sin was only covered from year to year on Yom Kippur. It has nothing to do with the validity of the Torah, which is binding in both covenants (Hebrews 8:10).

MINISTERS OF THE NEW COVENANT

*Are we beginning to recommend ourselves again? Unlike some people, we do not need letters of recommendation to you or from you, do we. ² You are our letter, written in our hearts and known and read by everyone. ³ You are demonstrating that you are the Messiah's letter, produced by our service, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human hearts. ⁴ Such is the confidence that we have in God through the Messiah. ⁵ By ourselves we are not qualified to claim that anything comes from us. Rather, our credentials come from God, ⁶ **who has also qualified us to be ministers of a new covenant**, which is not written but spiritual, because the written text brings death, but the Spirit gives life. ⁷ Now if the ministry of death that was inscribed in letters of stone came with such glory that the people of Israel could not gaze on Moses' face (because the glory was fading away from it), ⁸ will not the Spirit's ministry have even more glory? ⁹ **For if the ministry of condemnation has glory, then the ministry of justification has an overwhelming glory.** ¹⁰ In fact, that which once had glory lost its glory, because the other glory surpassed it. ¹¹ For if that which fades away came through glory, how much more does that which is permanent have glory? ¹² Therefore, since we have such a hope, we speak very boldly, ¹³ not like Moses, who kept covering his face with a veil to keep the people of Israel from gazing at the end of what was fading away.*

¹⁴ However, their minds were hardened, for to this day the same veil is still there when they read the old covenant. Only in union with the Messiah is that veil removed. ¹⁵ Yet even to this day, when Moses is read, a veil covers their hearts. ¹⁶ But whenever a person turns to the Lord, the veil is removed. **¹⁷ Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Lord's Spirit is, there is freedom.** ¹⁸ As all of us reflect the glory of the Lord with unveiled faces, we are becoming more like him with ever-increasing glory by the Lord's Spirit.

2 Corinthians 3:1-18 ISV

These words of Paul are deep. The true meaning can only be revealed through the Holy Spirit. The Greek word for “**mystery**”, “**mystērion**”, is found twenty-eight times in the New Testament. It means a sacred secret, something that God has hidden from ancient times and can only be revealed by God. Jesus teaches that these mysteries are meant for us to perceive as part of our Kingdom birthright (The Passion Bible, P442, quoting Romans 11:25).

It is indeed a mystery! Only when we are in union with Christ, the Messiah, can it be revealed to us that we are now living under a new covenant. Because He is a spirit, we now find our freedom in Him, because we are also spiritual beings after our born-again experience. We have been transformed from human beings to spiritual beings.

Dear friends, just like Isaac, we're now the true children who inherit the kingdom promises. ²⁹ And just as the son of the natural world at that time harassed the son born of the power of the Holy Spirit, so it is today. ³⁰ And what does the Scripture tell us to do? Galatians 4:28-30 TPT

Expel the slave mother with her son! Genesis 21:10

This is proof that the two "sons" are not meant to live together.
You cannot mingle **law and grace**, for only grace is based upon the
promise of new life. (Galatians 1:7 TPT)

The son of the slave woman will not be a true heir, for the true heir of the promises is the son of the free woman (See Genesis 21:10-12; John 8:35).

But what says the Scripture? "Cast out the slave woman and her son, for in no way shall the son of the slave woman inherit with the son of the free woman. Galatians 4:30 HRB

God Protected Hagar and Ishmael

The child grew and eventually was weaned, so Abraham threw a tremendous banquet on the very day Isaac was weaned. ⁹ Nevertheless, when Sarah saw the son of Hagar the Egyptian—whom Hagar had borne to Abraham—making fun of Isaac, ¹⁰ she told Abraham, "Throw out this slave girl, along with her son, because this slave's son will never be a co-heir with my son Isaac!"
Genesis 21:8-10 ISV

According to Genesis 21:9, Ishmael made fun of Isaac in such a way that Sarah asked Abraham to expel Hagar, the slave girl. We can only conclude that Ishmael was not simply teasing Isaac innocently.

In the biblical sense, this means that Ishmael was persecuting Isaac. God counted this persecution as the beginning of the four-hundred-year persecution of His people.

And he said unto Abram, Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years.

Genesis 15:13 KJV

And God spake on this wise, That his seed should sojourn in a strange land; and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat them evil four hundred years.

Acts 7:6 KJV

Ishmael's mocking of Isaac was a serious issue because Isaac was God's ordained seed and Ishmael was the counterfeit. The counterfeit always hates the ordained. We, the ordained seed, are hated by the counterfeit.

But as then he that was born according to flesh persecuted him that was born according to Spirit, so also it is now.

Galatians 4:29 ASV

When Isaac grew older, Ishmael was stirred up to persecute him. It is relevant in our lives in how we still boast about our natural goodness, saying, "Because I am doing A or B, I am worthy", or "I am not as proud as some brothers and sisters are. I thank God that I was born humble." The sisters may criticise others, saying, "I would never gossip the way Sister So-and-So does. I was not born that way." Even some elders and so-called ministers of the Word cannot keep from boasting about their natural attributes. Perhaps they say to themselves, "Brother X is so quick to lose his temper. But I thank God that my natural birth is much better than his." Maybe you do not utter such words, but it is still hidden deep within all of us to a certain extent.

When the Christ who has been "born in our Christian lives" begins to "grow up", our natural goodness will mock Him. Then the grace within

us should say, **"Cast out the law! Cast out the bondwoman and what she has produced within me by fleshly efforts!" Are you willing to do that?**

Sometimes we do it outwardly, but secretly still hold onto Hagar and Ishmael - the law and our natural attributes and goodness. Few Christians have the boldness to say, **"Cast out this bondwoman and her son! Cast out the law, the efforts of the flesh, and all the success of my own efforts!"** Rather, we cling to our successes and hold onto our natural goodness. **But eventually, God will force us to abandon the law, our self-effort, and all we have produced out of the flesh.** We will then begin to rise and say, "From now on, there will be no more Hagar and Ishmael! They must go!" Like Abraham, we will send them away with only bread and water (v. 14).

Eventually, we all must make this decision. We must rise one morning, give the law a skin of water, and say, "Law, go your way, and take with you the one you helped me produce. Don't leave him with me, because I don't want him anymore. I loved Ishmael in the past, but now I give him up." The law and the result of the effort of the flesh must be fully abandoned! We need to comprehend the spiritual significance of casting out Hagar and Ishmael!

Acknowledgement: Living Stream Ministry. Publisher of Watchman Nee & Witness Lee. <https://www.ministrysamples.org/excerpts/ISHMAELS-MOCKING-OF-ISAAC.HTML>

It's now so obvious! We're not the children of the slave woman; we're the supernatural sons of the free woman—sons of grace!
Galatians 4:31 TPT

THE NATURE OF GRACE

The root meaning of grace is *"comeliness, beauty imparted to us because we believe in Him."* He makes us beautiful by His grace. What a discovery we find in Song of Songs, written by Solomon.

The Shulamite

*I feel as dark and dry as the desert tents of the
wandering nomads.*

The Shepherd-King

*Yet you are so lovely—like the fine linen tapestry hanging
in the Holy Place.*

¹¹ ***We will enhance your beauty.***

Songs 1:5, 11 TPT

The Lord is looking at us as a new creation when He declares, *"Every part of you is so beautiful, my darling. Perfect is your beauty, without flaw within"* (Songs 4:7 TPT).

*And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise,
grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no
more grace: otherwise, work is no more work.*
Romans 11:6 KJV

*For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith--and
this is not from yourselves, it is the gift of God.*
Ephesians 2:8 NIV

Adonai has done this to protect us against the biggest sin, namely pride. We cannot and should not boast about anything. WE DID NOT EARN A THING!

THE LAW

What is the purpose of the law?

The law brings knowledge of sin and reveals our transgressions. It shows us who we are. But it also shows us Adonai's holy and perfect character. It is meant to bring us to the end of ourselves and to that place where we will cry out, "We need a Saviour!"

No man on earth can obey and achieve the rules of the law. It is impossible! According to orthodox rabbis, there are over 625 Jewish laws. Those believers who try to obey the law to the letter are also the ones who water it down to mere dietary or festival laws. It is not a set of rules and can't be achieved through rules.

For whoever keeps the whole law and yet stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking all of it. James 2:10 NIV

No flesh shall be justified in his sight, for by law is the knowledge of sin. Romans 3:20 JUB.

The purpose of the law is clearly to expose our weaknesses which Adonai diagnoses. The law exposes the problem, but the law can never solve it. We need the law to bring us to the realisation that we are in urgent need of grace. We are either under the law or under grace. We are either born from a free woman or a slave woman.

Many believers have the same Father, but not all have the same mother. Are you still under the bondage of the slave woman, Hagar? Or are you born from above, from the free woman, Sarah, a typology of the New Jerusalem?

No man can keep the law. The sooner we acknowledge this, the sooner His full grace can be imputed onto us. Law and grace are mutually exclusive. It can only be one or the other! The only way to come out of the dominion of sin, is to be under grace.

For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace. Romans 6:14 KJV

When we are still under the law, sin has dominion over us. When we are led by the Spirit, we are sons of Adonai!

For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. Romans 8:14 KJV

But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.
Galatians 5:18 KJV

Many believers twist scriptures to justify the law. Scriptures indeed teach us to obey God's commandments, but keeping them with the expectation of earning something or being in right standing with God as a result is not scriptural at all. Legalism only brings more division in the Body of Christ. Every denomination has its own set of rules. Believers then judge the righteousness of others by their own standards and rules. They focus on obedience to a set of rules instead of on faith.

Sometimes, as Gentiles, we read the Scriptures without knowledge of the true original meaning because of our lack of Jewish traditions and customs. According to Jewish law, no divorced person was allowed to

remarry unless the spouse had died. Remarrying while the previous spouse was still alive was adultery according to Jewish law. Likewise, Paul now explains to us in Romans 7 that we were also once married to the law. But now, after conversion, we become dead to the law and are free to marry **our new Husband, Yashuah HaMashiach. We are now born from a free woman! Previously, we were married to the law and were born from the slave woman.**

Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

Romans 7:4 KJV

At last, we have freedom for Christ has set us free! We must cherish this truth and firmly refuse to go back into the bondage of our past, as explained in Galatians 5:1 TPT. Our past was lived in the flesh. The old Adam nature, with its passion for sins, was stirred up by the law. The strength of sin is in the law.

The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.

1 Corinthians 15:56 KJV

The problem is not with the law but with trusting in our ability to fulfil it. We simply cannot do it! Instead of trusting in ourselves, we need to fully trust and rely on Yashuah HaMashiach. When we live a self-righteous life, we automatically shut God's grace out. Interesting that only the human race and fallen angels have a desire to be independent of God. Everything else in creation fully depends on Him.

We need Him in our every day's walk. We create a lot of problems for ourselves because we refuse to fully depend on Adonai.

We trick ourselves into self-reliance and self-dependence! Remember, there is nothing wrong with the law! The problem is our desire to be independent! The old rebellious nature of Adam constantly prevents us from entering into freedom.

When Christ appeared on earth, He presented Himself as if to say, *"Look! Here I am! I am the reality of the shadows that pointed to Me! I fulfilled the law on your behalf!"*

For Christ is the end of the law unto righteousness to every one that believeth. Romans 10:4 ASV

They simply could not grasp it and openly declared:

We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?
John 8:33 KJV

Yashuah replied:

If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. John 8:36 KJV

Legalism, Saints, will always keep us from freedom. When we come to Christ, it is the end of the law. This is the only way we can achieve right standing before the Father. Legalism appears to be something "good", but Paul regarded it as a problem more serious than adultery and drunkenness.

I am shocked over how quickly you have strayed away from the One who called you in the grace of Christ. I'm astounded that you now embrace a distorted gospel! ⁷ That is a fake "gospel" that is simply not true. There is only one gospel—the good news of Christ! Yet you have allowed

those who mingle law with grace to confuse you.

Galatians 1:6-7 TPT

*What has happened to you foolish Galatians? Who has put you under an evil spell? Did God not open your eyes to see the meaning of Jesus' crucifixion? Was he not revealed to you as the crucified one?² So answer me this: Did the Holy Spirit come to you as a reward for keeping Jewish laws? No, you received him as a gift because you believed in the Messiah.³ **Your new life began when the Holy Spirit gave you a new birth. Why then would you so foolishly turn from living in the Spirit by trying to finish by your own works?**⁴ Have you endured so many trials and persecutions for nothing?⁵ Let me ask you again: What does the lavish supply of the Holy Spirit in your life and the miracles of God's tremendous power have to do with you keeping religious laws? The Holy Spirit is poured out upon us through the revelation and power of faith!⁶ Abraham, our father of faith, believed God, and the substance of his faith released God's righteousness to him.⁷ So the true children of Abraham have the same faith as their father!⁸ And the scripture prophesied that on the basis of faith God would declare gentiles to be righteous. God announced the good news ahead of time to Abraham: 'Through your example of faith, all the nations will be blessed!' Galatians 3:1-8 TPT*

Paul remarked that the Holy Spirit started their journey off based on righteousness, but they were still trying to justify themselves by returning to the law. Being under the law is being under the curse.

But if you rely on works of keeping the law for salvation, you live under the law's curse. For it is clearly written: 'Utterly cursed is everyone who fails to practice every detail and requirement that is written in this law!'
Galatians 3:10-11 TPT

Yet, Christ paid the full price to set us free from the curse of the law. He absorbed the curse completely, as He became a curse in our place. For it is written: 'Everyone who is hung upon a tree is cursed.' Galatians 3:13 TPT

Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD. Jeremiah 17:5 KJV

Cursed is the man who trusts in man. The flesh strengthens the heart and then man departs from the Lord. Many begin the Christian life in the Spirit but do not continue in the grace of Adonai. They try to do for themselves what only God can do and bring themselves under the curse.

A Confession to be made!

I meditated on these scriptures for many years. It was only after I had listened to Derek Prince explaining this principle that I realised I was under the very same curse. That night, my wife and I had communion and repented of our self-centred, self-reliant life.

While Derek was ministering in Jerusalem with another pastor who explained this concept to someone, his wife realised they were under this curse. At that stage, they had been trying to sell their house for fourteen months without success. Realising that evening that they were

trusting in the real estate agent to sell the house and not in God, they confessed. When they arrived at home, an agent stood waiting at the door with a client to buy the property! How easily we are destroyed by our self-reliant efforts! This is how the devil keeps us in his snare.

For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: ⁴ That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. Romans 8:3- 4 KJV

There is no love in legalism, as indicated by the loveless, merciless acts of the Pharisees. Let us labour to show love for one another, for LOVE is the fulfilment of the whole law!

Owe no man anything, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.
Romans 8:8 KJV KJV

A certain lawyer came to Jesus with a question. Interesting that he was identified as a lawyer, as he intended to tempt Yahshua.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? ³⁷ Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. ³⁸ This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹ And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. ⁴⁰ On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. Matthew 22:36-40 KJV

Are you keeping the greatest and most important commandment? Let us not owe anyone anything but to love one another!

When you're placed into the Anointed One and joined to him, circumcision and religious obligations can benefit you nothing. All that matters now is living in the faith that works and expresses itself through love. Galatians 5:6 TPT

For we reach the goal of fulfilling all the commandments when we love others deeply with a pure heart, a clean conscience, and sincere faith. 1 Timothy 1:5 TPT

There is only one proof that we are indeed His disciples and that is demonstrating our love for one another.

By this everyone will know that you are my disciples, if you love one another. John 13:35 KJV

Let this be a warning to all in ministry. When ministers of the Word produce disciples with knowledge but without love, all our efforts are wasted. Knowledge puffs up but love edifies and builds up!

Now about food offered to idols: of course we know that all of us possess knowledge [concerning these matters. Yet mere] knowledge causes people to be puffed up (to bear themselves loftily and be proud), but love (affection and goodwill and benevolence) edifies and builds up and encourages one to grow [to his full stature].

1 Corinthians 8:1 AMPC

We can easily motivate our children with fear, but it will only be love that keeps them close to us when they are grown. Likewise, Adonai knows the only way to motivate his Body is through love.

In conclusion, James explains that faith without works is dead. Likewise, faith and works without love will also be dead!

*But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, **but a doer of the work**, this man shall be blessed in his deed.*

James 1:25 KJV

FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS DEAD

When we hear the Word of God but do not act upon it, our faith is dead.

Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: ⁴⁸ He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. Luke 6:47-48 KJV

*What does it profit, my brethren, if someone says he has faith but does not have works? Can faith save him? ¹⁵ If a brother or sister is naked and destitute of daily food, ¹⁶ and one of you says to them, "Depart in peace, be warmed and filled," but you do not give them the things which are needed for the body, what does it profit? ¹⁷ Thus also faith by itself, if it does not have works, is dead. ¹⁸ But someone will say, "You have faith, and I have works." Show me your faith without [a]your works, and I will show you my faith by my works. ¹⁹ You believe that there is one God. You do well. Even the demons believe—and tremble! ²⁰ But do you want to know, O foolish man, that faith without works is dead? ²¹ Was not Abraham our father justified by works when he offered Isaac His Son on the altar? ²² **Do you see***

that faith was working together with his works, and by works faith was made perfect? ²³ And the scripture was fulfilled which says, "Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness." And he was called the friend of God. ²⁴ You see then that a man is justified by works, and not by faith only. ²⁵ Likewise, was not Rahab the harlot also justified by works when she received the messengers and sent them out another way? ²⁶ For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. James 2:14-26 TPT

Doctrine of Baptisms

Most believers are immature and in need of milk (Hebrews 5:11-14).

There are six important principles of growing to spiritual maturity.

Repentance from dead works.

Faith toward God.

Baptisms.

Laying on of hands.

Resurrection of the dead.

Eternal judgment.

Paul gives us a protocol to follow. We often miss most of these steps in our walk with Christ. That is why our temples are collapsing.

After **repentance** comes **faith toward God**, both of which we have already discussed. Then follow baptisms. The Greek word is "**baptizo**". It means *being immersed* "**in**" and "**into**". It also involves "**someone**". Through baptism, our old nature, born from a corruptible seed which is the old man in the flesh or our Adam nature, must be executed on the

stake. This is the only way to deal with our rebellious spirit. We deserve to be put to death!

But because of the love of our heavenly Father, who loved the world so much that he gave His only begotten Son, Yashuah HaMashiach, so "that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life" (John 3:16 KJV).

The Father put His Son on the stake on our behalf so we can have everlasting life.

Those who belong to Christ Jesus have nailed the passions and desires of their sinful nature to His cross and crucified them there. Galatians 5:24 NLT

We must follow Adonai's protocol. First, we must repent, make a commitment to Yashuah, and confess we need a Saviour. Then, we release faith toward God. Execution on the stake follows when we put our old fleshly nature on the cross. Next, Paul addresses the doctrine of baptisms. Notice the plural form - **baptisms!**

Believers often do not understand this doctrinal requirement of Christ. I also rebelled against it when I did not understand the full concept of being immersed. After many years of Bible study under the leadership of the Holy Ghost, I now have the boldness to release the truth, which is found only in the Bible and not in any denominational doctrine. We cannot believe in Yashuah and simultaneously disbelieve what the Word (Jesus) teaches us.

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God and the Word was God. John 1:1 KJV

And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father), full of grace and truth. John 1:14 KJV

John's vision on the Isle of Patmos

*And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. ¹² His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. ¹³ And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: **and his name is called The Word of God.** Revelation 19:11-13 KJV*

It cannot be denied that the Written Word is Yashuah. He became the Living Word in a human body. He has risen and ascended into the heavens from where He will return on a white horse with eyes flaming like fire. On His head will be many crowns and His written name will be "**The Word of God**". The Word of God is the highest authority!

If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken.
John 10:35 KJV

SOMEONE, IN AND UNTO

An understanding of the exact meaning of the Greek word "**baptizo**" will give us a better understanding of what Christ requires of us. Baptism is a transition from one side (*the dark side, the old nature*) to another

side (*the light, the new creation man*). It is not a partial transition but a full transition.

The word "**baptizo**" implies immersion by going down into the water or by pouring water over the whole body. The requirement is total immersion and not partial immersion. This automatically disqualifies the sprinkling of a few drops of water on the forehead.

"**Baptizo**" speaks of three elements, namely **SOMEONE, IN** and **UNTO**.

Understanding these fundamental issues will bring revelation knowledge of the different baptisms.

"**Someone**" will always be involved in your baptism, e.g., a believer, the Holy Spirit, or Yashuah.

"**In**" refers to the element in which you are being immersed, e.g., water or the Holy Spirit.

"**Unto**" describes the element that you are baptised into as the result of your baptism, e.g., salvation.

Thus, there must be **someone** to perform the baptism, and there must be a result – **something** unto which the person is baptised. We are baptised by someone unto something.

John the Baptist baptised believers **IN** water **UNTO** repentance for the forgiveness of sin. He baptised people in water, but He who would come after him, would baptise them in the Holy Ghost.

I baptize you with water for repentance. But after me comes one who is more powerful than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire. Matthew 3:11 NIV

This is a baptism **IN** the Holy Spirit **UNTO** power. This power refers to resurrection power, which is Dunamis Power. The same power that God

the Father used to raise His Son from the dead is also in me and in you (Romans 11:8).

For we were all baptized by one Spirit so as to form one body--whether Jews or Gentiles, slave or free--and we were all given the one Spirit to drink.

1 Corinthians 12:13 NIV

ONE BAPTISM

Although the Bible teaches seven different baptisms, Paul mentions "one body, one spirit and **one baptism**."

There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; ⁵ One Lord, one faith, one baptism, ⁶ One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

Ephesians 4:4-6 KJV

Scriptures can never contradict each other, so what is Paul referring to? He does not mean to say there is only one baptism. Instead, it means there is only **one** of the different baptisms which every believer must obey and take part in. There is only **ONE BAPTISM** essential for SALVATION! Does that mean all the other baptisms are not essential? The other baptisms are not essential for salvation, but they are essential for other things. These seven baptisms are all a package deal and essential for a believer to walk in total freedom. Let us examine this package deal.

1. BAPTISM OF MOSES

*For I do not want you to be unaware, brothers, that our fathers were all under the cloud, and all passed through the sea, ² and all were **baptized into Moses** in the cloud and in the sea, ³ and all ate the same spiritual food, ⁴ and all drank the same spiritual drink. For they drank from the spiritual Rock that followed them, and the Rock was Christ.*

1 Corinthians 10:1-4 ESV

Here is a typology of what is to come - a foreshadowing of the New Testament baptism. Israel passed through the Red Sea and found themselves surrounded by walls of water. This was their water baptism.

Moses described how, as they walked on dry ground, a cloud directed them. This cloud was the Spirit of the Lord leading them on. It was their baptism in the Holy Spirit (Exodus 14:21-31). Thus, God delivered (saved) the children of Israel from bondage to the Egyptians and led them out of Egypt. This event is called the "Exodus". Accordingly, this is what Paul is referring to in Corinthians. This baptism is symbolic and serves as a type of the One to come, Yashuah HaMashiach. It prophesied that one day we would all be baptised in water and in the Holy Spirit.

Notice that Paul says the Israelites were baptised in water INTO Moses. That speaks of a baptism into the leadership of Moses. Today, we are not baptised into Moses or any other leadership or ministry, but into the leadership of Christ Jesus.

2. BAPTISM OF SUFFERING

Jesus said to them, "You do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I drink, or to be baptized with the baptism with which I am baptized?" ³⁹ And they

*said to him, "We are able." And Jesus said to them, "**The cup that I drink you will drink, and with the baptism with which I am baptized, you will be baptized.**"*

Mark 10:38-39 ESV

This baptism is not in water but refers to the suffering and shame associated with the death of Christ, also called the "*baptism of the cross*". The cup Jesus had to drink was a cup of shame and torment through scourging and the suffering on the cross (Matthew 26:36-46). Jesus was overwhelmed by and immersed in pain and dishonour.

James and John once asked for glory and honour but would instead receive the same treatment as Jesus because they followed Him. Similarly, our calling is to suffer for the sake of Christ.

In fact, you were called to live this way, because Christ also suffered in your place, leaving you his example for you to follow. 1 Peter 2:21 TPT

3. BAPTISM OF JOHN

*John appeared, baptizing in the wilderness and proclaiming a baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sins. ⁵ And all the country of Judea and all Jerusalem were going out to him and were being baptized by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins. ⁶ Now John was clothed with camel's hair and wore a leather belt around his waist and ate locusts and wild honey. ⁷ And he preached, saying, 'After me comes he who is mightier than I, the strap of whose sandals I am not worthy to stoop down and untie. ⁸ **I have***

baptized you with water, but he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit. Mark 1:4-8 ESV

John was to prepare the way of the Lord and make His paths straight (Mark 1:3). His baptism was in water (*Jordan River*) and was for repentance and forgiveness of sins. The Pharisees and lawyers rejected John's baptism and, by doing so, rejected the purpose of God (Luke 7:29-30). Many still participate in this baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sin.

The Apostle Paul passed through the upper coasts and came to Ephesus. He found certain disciples there and asked if they had received the Holy Spirit since they believed. But, they had never heard of the Holy Spirit!

And he said unto them, Into what then were ye baptized? And they said, Into John's baptism. ⁴ Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people that they should believe on him who should come after him, that is, on Christ, Jesus. ⁵ When they heard this, they were baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus. Acts 19:3-5 JUB

The fact that Paul baptised these disciples into the Name of Jesus confirms that John's baptism cannot be the "one baptism" Paul rerefers to. We will later see what this mandatory "one baptism" for the New Testament believer is.

4. THE BAPTISM OF JESUS

Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan to John, to be baptized by him. ¹⁴ John would have prevented him,

saying, "I need to be baptized by you, and do you come to me?" ¹⁵ But Jesus answered him, "**Let it be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.**" Then he consented. ¹⁶ And when Jesus was baptized, immediately he went up from the water, and behold, the heavens were opened to him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and coming to rest on him; ¹⁷ and behold, a voice from heaven said, 'This is my beloved Son, with whom I am well pleased.' Matthew 3:13-17 ESV

This account tells of Christ's own baptism, administered by John the Baptist in the water of the Jordan River. Christ knew no sin, with no need of repentance or forgiveness (2 Corinthians 5:21). However, He still underwent a baptism to "**fulfill all righteousness**". Unlike the Pharisees who rejected the purpose of God, Christ, by way of example, shows us the will of the Father by obedience to be baptised. The Father confirms His love for His Son and immediately bestows the Spirit upon Him. This event released Jesus to start His ministry. Note that the reason for Christ's baptism was **to fulfill all righteousness!**

This act of obedience gave all believers right standing before the Father. A detailed discussion on this will follow.

I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.

John 14:6 NIV

5. BAPTISM OF FIRE

I baptize you with water for repentance, but he who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not

*worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and **fire**.¹² His winnowing fork is in his hand, and he will clear his threshing floor and gather his wheat into the barn, but the chaff he will burn with unquenchable fire.*
Matthew 3:11-12 ESV

In this context, three different baptisms are in view.

- First, the baptism of John.
- Second, the baptism of the Holy Spirit.
- Finally, the baptism of fire.

Christ will one day gather His wheat securely into His barn, but the chaff will be burned with unquenchable fire (Matthew 3:12). Seemingly, this speaks of the future administration of judgment on those who disobey the Gospel. In the context of sanctification, this verse may be applied to our own lives. All filthiness in us should be burned to cleanse us, purify us, and make us whole and holy again so we will be blameless and spotless before our Bridegroom.

Similarly, 2 Thessalonians 1:5-9 reveals that Christ will return in “**flaming fire**”, inflicting vengeance on those who do not know God and do not obey the Gospel of our Lord Jesus. Therefore, this baptism is not of water. It is eternal “**fire**” to all those who reject the Lord and do not obey the Gospel.

There is also evidence that fire is a wall of protection that surrounds us.

‘And I myself will be a wall of fire around it,’ declares the LORD, ‘and I will be its glory within.’
Zechariah 2:5 NIV

Also, our Bridegroom will bring fire upon those who seek to destroy us.

Let the heads of those who surround me be covered with the trouble their lips have caused: ¹⁰ Let burning coals fall upon them; may they be thrown into the fire, into miry pits, never to rise. Ps 140:9-10 NIV

6. BAPTISM OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

*I baptize you with water for repentance, but he who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the **Holy Spirit** and fire. ¹² His winnowing fork is in his hand, and he will clear his threshing floor and gather his wheat into the barn, but the chaff he will burn with unquenchable fire. Matthew 3:11-12 ESV*

This baptism is not baptism in the Name of Jesus but baptism which will be performed directly by the hand of Christ. One of these is the baptism of the Holy Spirit upon men. Though the Holy Spirit will always remain a mystery in many ways, the Scriptures have revealed several things about Him that will help us understand when and why these baptisms took place.

The outpouring of the Holy Spirit on “*all flesh*” was prophesied in Joel 2. This happened on Pentecost when the apostles gathered in Jerusalem while waiting for Christ’s promise of the Holy Spirit (Acts 1:5, 8). With a mighty rushing sound, the Holy Spirit filled the apostles (baptised them). They began to speak in different tongues (known languages, see verses 8-11). This fulfilled John’s prophecy that Christ would baptise with the Holy Spirit. Additionally, it partially fulfilled the pouring out of

the Spirit on "all flesh" in verse 17. In chapter 10, we see the fulfilment of the rest of the prophecy. A more complete discussion will follow.

7. BAPTISM IN THE NAME OF JESUS

*"Let all the house of Israel therefore know for certain that God has made him both Lord and Christ, this Jesus whom you crucified."³⁷ Now when they heard this they were cut to the heart, and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles, "Brothers, what shall we do?"³⁸ And Peter said to them, "Repent and be baptized every one of you **in the name of Jesus Christ** for the forgiveness of your sins, and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. Acts 2:36-38 ESV*

The Jews realised they had killed the Son of God. Cut to their hearts, they asked Peter what they could do. He instructed them that each should repent and be baptised, not in the name of John but in the Name of Jesus, who was both Lord and Christ! This baptism was not merely ceremonial but for "**the forgiveness of your sins**". The Scriptures are clear that baptism in the Name of Jesus Christ is for the forgiveness of sins. Without this baptism, there is no forgiveness.

For the believer, this is crucial. We want to participate in the victory of the resurrected life of Christ, but few are willing to share in His suffering. We need to grasp this Biblical truth that we, too, need to die first before we can be resurrected. If you have never gone down into the water, the question remains, "When were you then executed and sentenced to death?"

Our burial with Christ occurs during baptism when the old self dies (Romans 6:1-6). Baptism is our execution on the stake. Our sins are

nailed to the cross (Colossians 2:11-15), and Christ washes them away by His Blood (Acts 22:16).

Baptism in the Name of Jesus Christ places us into the Body of Christ. *"For as many of you were baptized into Christ have put on Christ"* and were made *"sons of God, through faith"* (Galatians 3:26, 27 KJV).

Acts 2:42-47, declares that those who were baptised were those whom the Lord added to the number of saved believers.

Baptism in the Name of Jesus Christ also happened in water. In Acts 10, Peter asks, *"Who can refuse the water?"* This baptism occurred directly after repentance. We read the story of Philip and the eunuch in Acts 8:26-40. After Philip had preached to him, the eunuch remarked, *"See, here is water. What hinders me from being baptized?"* They both went down into the water, and Philip baptised him.

Baptism in the Name of Jesus Christ saves us. After commanding all to repent and be baptised in the Name of Jesus for the forgiveness of sins, Peter tells them to *"save themselves!"* Consequently, baptism occurred for those who received His words (Acts 2:40-41). Peter writes in 1 Peter 3:21 that *"baptism now saves you"*. Christ says:

***He who believes and is baptized will be saved, but
he who does not believe will be condemned.***

Mark 16:16 MKJV

After Yashuah's ascension into heaven, we see in the Book of Acts that the Baptism of John (unto repentance) was no longer valid and not essential for salvation.

Directly after the outpouring of the Holy Ghost upon 120 men in the Upper Room in Jerusalem, Peter explained the crucifixion, burial, and

ascension of Jesus to 3 000 men. They were cut to the heart and asked Peter what they should do (Acts 2:37 TLV).

Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. Acts 2:38 KJV

Peter did not mention the baptism of John but the baptism IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST for the remission of sins. The Baptism of John is baptism unto repentance but now we need baptism into the remission of sins in the Name of Jesus.

We also find confirmation in Acts. 18. A Jew named Apollos was accurately teaching the things regarding Jesus, yet he knew only the Baptism of John. Consequently, Paul needed to correct those whom Apollos had taught in Ephesus. In this instance, Priscilla and Aquila explained the way of God to Apollos more accurately (Acts 18:24-26). **Those under the baptism of John still needed a baptism in the Name of Jesus** (Acts 19:1-7). Therefore, John's baptism is not the "one baptism" Paul refers to.

The ONE baptism that all believers must obey and teach is the Baptism in the Name of Jesus Christ. This baptism occurs in water and results in the forgiveness of sins. This brings salvation by the Blood of Christ as we participate in His death, burial, and resurrection.

God's Original Plan

We must realise that the Old Testament believers could not be born again. To understand this, let's explore what went wrong with mankind.

When God created Adam and Eve, He dwelt with them in the Garden of Eden. His original plan was for man to share in His authority and to rule on earth, not to serve Him as a servant (Genesis 1:26-28).

THE FIRST THING GOD GAVE MAN WAS HIS IMAGE AND LIKENESS.

God said, Let Us [Father, Son and Holy Spirit] make mankind in Our image, after Our likeness, and let them have complete authority over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, the [tame] beasts, and over all of the earth, and over everything that creeps upon the earth.

Genesis 1:26 AMPC (Psalm 104:30; Hebrews 1:2; 11:3)

THE SECOND THING GOD DID WAS TO POSITION MAN IN HIS "PRESENCE", WHICH IS THE HEBREW MEANING OF THE WORD "EDEN".

- God's greatest desire was for man to be like Him, act like Him and dwell with Him.
- **Image** = Resemblance (Strong's H6754) or exact **likeness** (Webster's "image").

Therefore, to be made in God's image means man resembles God and is an exact likeness of Him.

- **Eden** = A place of **God's presence** (Isaiah 51:3; Ezekiel 28:13).
- God gave man His nature and then put him in His presence.
- God desires a relationship with us.

CREATED FOR A PURPOSE

God created man to have dominion over all the earth. He created man in an image different from any other creature and to possess His spiritual and moral nature.

*What is man that You are mindful of him, and the son of [earthborn] man that You care for him? ⁵ Yet You have made him but a little lower than God [or heavenly beings], and You have **crowned him with glory** and honor. ⁶ You made him have **dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet.** Psalm 8:4-6 AMPC (1 Corinthians 15:27; Ephesians 1:22-23; Hebrews 2:6-8.)*

GOD GAVE MAN INSTRUCTIONS TO GOVERN HIS LIFE IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN. THESE INCLUDED RULES ON WHAT WAS ALLOWED TO BE EATEN AND WHAT NOT.

*And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, You may freely eat of every tree of the garden; ¹⁷ But of the **tree of the knowledge of good and evil and blessing and calamity you shall not eat**, for in the day that you eat of it you shall **surely die.** Genesis 2:16-17 AMPC*

Death was the proscribed consequence for disobeying this principle.

In the sweat of your face shall you eat bread until you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust, you shall return. Genesis 3:19 AMPC

DEATH IS THE ABSENCE OF GOD'S PRESENCE IN MAN'S LIFE.

The serious consequence of man's disregard for God's principles is the loss of the presence of the Holy Spirit and subsequent separation from God. Spiritual death is at the root of all the ills that plague us as individuals and as a society. Without Him, we have no hope of finding true happiness or of fulfilling the purpose for which we were born. Man cannot and will not live up to the potential and purpose God built into him until the love and intimacy which God and man enjoyed in the garden are restored!

CREATOR GOD IS MAN'S SOURCE

When God made man, He spoke with Himself and created man from Himself. Thus, man was created both to be of the same essence as God, who is spirit (John 4:24), and to live in the same environment as God which is the realm of the spirit or the environment of God.

*So God created man in **His own image**, in the **image and likeness of God He created him**; male and female He created them. Genesis 1:27 AMPC [Colossians 3:9-10; James 3:8-9]*

Man cannot function effectively in the wrong environment. The following example will help us understand this. No matter how expensive an item is, when operating it in the wrong environment, it will not function effectively, e.g., a TV screen simply can't function under water. The **place of God's presence**, Eden, is man's ideal environment. Unbroken fellowship between God and man is the environment that God planned for man. Our ideal environment is nothing more and nothing less than

the presence of God. Outside of this perfect environment, man cannot live a meaningful life.

OUTSIDE OF GOD'S PRESENCE, MAN IS IN A STATE OF MALFUNCTION

Man's choice to commit sin is often called the fall of man. This is a fall from God's presence with the accompanying loss of the Holy Spirit.

*Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the Garden of Eden to till the ground from which he was taken. ²⁴ **So [God] drove out the man;** and He placed at the east of the Garden of Eden the **cherubim and a flaming sword which turned every way**, to keep and guard the way to the tree of life. Genesis 3:23-24 AMPC (Revelation 2:7; 22:2, 14, 19)*

Eden was the place of God's presence. Man's banishment from Eden resulted in banishment from God's presence. Since the fall, man has been working hard to return to God's presence. Let us see why this is the case.

CONTAMINATED

God is holy, which means He is completely pure in motive and perfect in goodness, righteousness, and justice. Because man committed sin, he was contaminated and lost the privilege of being in the holy presence of God.

Exalt the LORD our God, and worship at his holy hill; for the LORD our God is holy. Psalm 99:9 KJV

Sanctify the LORD of hosts himself, and let him be your fear, and let him be your dread. Isaiah 8:13 KJV

For thy Maker is thine husband; the LORD of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called. Isaiah 54:5 KJV

But the LORD of hosts shall be exalted in judgment, and God that is holy shall be sanctified in righteousness. Isaiah 5:16 KJV

His presence is holy

*And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou **standest is holy ground**. Exodus 3:5 KJV*

*And it came to pass, when Joshua was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes and looked, and, behold, there stood a man over against him with his sword drawn in his hand: and Joshua went unto him, and said unto him, Art thou for us, or for our adversaries? ¹⁴ And he said, Nay; but as captain of the host of the LORD am I now come. And Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and did worship, and said unto him, What saith my lord unto his servant? ¹⁵ And the captain of the LORD'S host said unto Joshua, Loose thy shoe from off thy foot; for the place **whereon thou standest is holy**. And Joshua did so. Joshua 5:13-15 KJV*

When man lost the Holy Spirit, he lost the holiness of God which was his birthright, for he was created in God's image. God expelled man from Eden (His presence) and placed cherubim at the entrance of the garden to protect His presence from sinful man.

CHERUBIM

Cherubim are winged angels guarding the Lord's presence.

Give ear, O Shepherd of Israel, thou that leadest Joseph like a flock; thou that dwellest between the cherubims shine forth. Psalm 80:1 KJV

The LORD reigneth; let the people tremble: he sitteth between the cherubims; let the earth be moved. Psalm 99:1 KJV

O LORD of hosts, God of Israel, that dwellest between the cherubims, thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: thou hast made heaven and earth. Isaiah 37:16 KJV

Cherubim were particularly evident in the design of the Ark of the Covenant. With outspread wings, they guarded the Mercy Seat where God's presence dwelt on top of the Ark. When the priests entered the Most Holy Place, they had to pass by the cherubim to get to God. If any person contaminated by sin approached God's presence, he would never get past the cherubim. Sinful people could not enter God's presence, lest they be consumed by HIM.

SERAPHIM

Seraphim protected the holiness of God, but they also met Isaiah's need when he recognised his sinfulness in the presence of a Holy God. Thus, their role was both to protect God's presence and to preserve man after recognising his sinfulness by repenting.

*In the year that king Uzziah died I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple. ² Above it stood the **seraphim**: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly. ³ And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory. ⁴ And the posts of the door moved at the voice of him that cried, and the house was filled with smoke. ⁵ Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I am a **man of unclean lips**, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts. ⁶ **Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar: ⁷ And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.** Isaiah 6:1-7 KJV*

Seraphim and cherubim didn't protect man from God. Their task was to protect God's presence from man. God's presence was still man's intended environment and the place where he would function properly, despite his sin and his loss of holiness. Man was still the image of God. What has then changed? Man lost his ability to function and act like God! When man lost the Holy Spirit, he could no longer function from the

spiritual and moral character of God. Man was still spirit, just like God is Spirit, but he could no longer function in truth and righteousness like God. This is why David, after committing sin with Bathsheba, desired God.

Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me: ¹¹ Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy spirit from me. Psalm 51:10-11 KJV

JESUS CAME TO OUR RESCUE

While we could not return to His presence because we were contaminated by SIN, Jesus died for us.

While we were yet in weakness [powerless to help ourselves], at the fitting time Christ died for (in behalf of) the ungodly. ⁷ Now it is an extraordinary thing for one to give his life even for an upright man, though perhaps for a noble and lovable and generous benefactor someone might even dare to die. ⁸ But God shows and clearly proves His [own] love for us by the fact that while we were still sinners, Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One) died for us. ⁹ Therefore, since we are now justified (acquitted, made righteous, and brought into right relationship with God) by Christ's blood, how much more [certain is it that] we shall be saved by Him from the indignation and wrath of God. ¹⁰ For if while we were enemies we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, it is much more [certain], now that we are reconciled, that we shall be saved (daily delivered

from sin's dominion) through His [resurrection] life.

Romans 5:6-10 AMPC

God rescued us because He wanted His family back. He knows that we are malfunctioning, and He restored us to our original environment. He deals with all our sin, iniquity, and rebellion before He allows us near His Holy Place. Even if we reach that Holy Place, we will find cherubim and seraphim hovering around God to prevent us from approaching Him before our sin is atoned for. Restoring you to your garden home has been God's plan all along. This proves how valuable we are to God despite our sin.

RECONNECTED

The very moment Adam disobeyed God in the Garden of Eden, sin entered the entire world through one person. The only way we can be reconnected to God is by accepting His gift of salvation through Jesus Christ. He alone can cleanse us from all sin.

Therefore, even as through one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin, and so death passed on all men inasmuch as all sinned. Romans 5:12 MKJV

David wrote, "*Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin my mother conceived me*" (Psalm 51:5). Because of the fall, the seed of the woman became corruptible and contaminated. The human race was born in iniquity and sin. It was the Father's long-range restoration plan to return us to our original state as before the fall. Yashuah made this very clear to Nicodemus.

Unless you are born of water and the Spirit, you will never enter God's kingdom. ⁶ For the natural realm only gives birth to things that are natural, but the spiritual realm gives birth to supernatural life! John 3:5b-6 TPT

We were born from a corruptible seed, the flesh. But Yashuah gave us a second chance. He came to earth so we could have a born-again experience, this time from an incorruptible seed. This means to be born from above, from the spirit.

You shouldn't be amazed by my statement, 'You all must be born from above!' ⁸ For the Spirit-Wind blows as it chooses. You can hear its sound, but you don't know where it came from or where it's going. So it is the same with those who are Spirit-born! John 3:7-8 TPT

This born-again experience is a supernatural experience, orchestrated by the Holy Spirit. It comes from an incorruptible seed which is the Word of God. The Holy Spirit is the sound, the voice, which brings conviction that we are sinners in need of a Saviour.

Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever. 1 Peter 1:23 KJV

Before coming into the holiness of Yehôvâh Elohim, we first need a transformation – a born-again experience from incorruptible seed, to cleanse us. At that moment, something supernatural happens. Our sinful nature changes to a new creation man. Only then do we have the boldness to approach the throne. Glory to God! The only way we can stay connected is by living our lives in His presence daily.

With this background, let us move on to a complete and detailed discussion of the baptisms that the Bible teaches. Some information will be repeated, for the truth to be set firmly in the heart of the believer.

THE PACKAGE DEAL

Bible scholars use different names for these baptisms. They also have different opinions on baptisms. The purpose of this book is to discover the Biblical truth so we can understand baptisms. The truth sets us free! Therefore, we will stick to what the Bible teaches and not to any person's opinion.

"Baptizō" is the Greek word for **"baptism"**. It *means to wash, to dip, to be fully immersed by someone into something!* In ancient times, this word was used when a garment or cloth was put into a vessel with dye to saturate it with a new colour. When the cloth was extracted from the dye, it was a brand new colour. The original word means "to dip and to dye". This is what happens when we come unto Christ. We are dipped into the Blood of Jesus. It is the Blood that saturates us, cleanses us, and changes us to never be the same again. We are dipped and dyed and then placed into Christ.

Baptisms is a doctrinal foundation for the believer. As we know by now, Paul refers to "one Lord, one faith and **one baptism**" (Ephesians 4:5). He speaks of the one baptism that is specifically **essential for salvation**. All the other baptisms we find in the Bible are essential for other things to ensure total freedom in the believer's life. The Holy Spirit led me to the following illustration of the baptisms package deal.

This **package deal** can be explained by using a very expensive and exclusive automobile as example, namely the Bugatti. It costs almost 30 million US Dollars. It has 12 radiators to cool down the engine, which can generate an incredible 1500 hp. The tyres were specially designed to handle the top speed of 490 km/h. Its unique body design and interior qualities distinguish it from any other automobile.

All aspects mentioned are part of the complete Bugatti package. Without the appropriate engine or specific tyres and body design, the automobile will be incomplete and cannot be known as the Bugatti La Voiture Noire!

Most Christians come unto salvation, which is baptism by the Holy Spirit in the Body of Christ unto salvation. Salvation also comes with a **price tag** - the most expensive price ever paid for this "**brand new vehicle**", which is the new creation man (2 Corinthians 5:17).

The believer is now unique like a Bugatti and is completely distinguished from any other car on the road. But without the necessary parts of a Bugatti, it is not a Bugatti. Imagine opening the bonnet and there is no engine inside! Fitting any other engine will change the characteristics of the Bugatti and it will not be able to reach 490 km/h. The engine refers to the **Holy Spirit baptism** unto power. That is **Dunamis Power**, which is resurrection power!

The Bugatti has specially designed tyres to keep it on the road. Likewise, believers must have specially designed "tyres" to be able to apply Dunamis resurrection power. Any other tyre fitted on the Bugatti will burst at the speed of 490 km/h, with catastrophic consequences. Most believers do not even have tyres on their Bugattis! Many consider water baptism (*immersion*) unnecessary because they think they are already saved and need not do anything else. Although it is true that we are

saved and “look like a Bugatti”, a very important necessity is missing, namely, the **tyres**. Unless we bury our bodies in the water, we do not have appropriate tyres to keep us on the road. If the specially designed tyres are replaced by any other tyre (*sprinkling of water, for instance*), they will not be able to stand the heat!

Likewise, the believer is a new creation man in Christ Jesus and does not resemble any other human race or creature on earth. As the characteristics and aerodynamic design of the Bugatti distinguish it from all other cars, so the Christian believer is distinguished from the unbeliever. We are designed to operate in supernatural power and speed to be the light of this world. We need a specially designed engine, which is the baptism by Jesus in the Holy Spirit to receive His Dunamis resurrection power. Only then can the believer outrun all others. If the believer does not bury his old body through water immersion, the tyres will come off eventually, resulting in a devastating “*crash*”.

With this background, it is possible to put together the full package deal God ordained for the human race, so we can be fully equipped and ready for any assignment on planet Earth.

The seven different baptisms are listed as the package deal in the following table. It is important to know that you must be baptised **BY** someone, there must be a substance **IN** which you are being baptised, and you must be baptised **UNTO** something, which is the result of the baptism.

Baptism	BY	IN	UNTO	PACKAGE DEAL
MOSES	Adonai	Water	Leadership	Typology – Dream to become a born-again believer
John's	John the Baptist	Water	Repentance	Receiving Keys
Born Again	Holy Spirit	The Body of Christ	Salvation	Body
Water	Believer	Water	Fulfilling Righteousness	Tyres
Jesus	Jesus	Holy Spirit	Power (Dunamis)	Engine
Fire	Jesus	Fire	Purification	Fuel
Suffering	Holy Spirit	Suffering	Inherit Kingdom	Service / Maintenance

Remember that John's baptism of repentance is not sufficient or necessary anymore. What is essential is **baptism into Jesus Christ**.

And Paul said, John truly baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying to the people that they should believe into Him coming after him, that is, into Jesus Christ.

Acts 19:4 MKJV

According to my understanding, there is nothing wrong with being baptised in water unto repentance, but it is not essential for salvation. There is only **ONE BAPTISM essential for salvation**, and that is when the **Holy Spirit** baptises us *in* the **Body of Christ unto salvation**.

Let us discuss the following three essential baptisms for the New Testament believer.

Born-Again Baptism

Many Bible scholars refer to this baptism as the baptism of the Holy Spirit. When Paul says there is one Lord, one Faith and **ONE BAPTISM**, he refers to this baptism of the Holy Spirit. Many members of the Body of Christ do not regard this as a baptism, but the Bible refers to it as baptism performed by the **Holy Spirit** unto **salvation**. This is not water baptism nor an act of man. We are saved by grace through faith. Adonai orchestrates this baptism to be executed by the Holy Spirit so no one will ever boast of his salvation. Salvation is never through our own efforts or works, nor will any person receive glory for another person's conversion. **Nothing we do could ever earn us this salvation.**

Throughout the coming ages we will be the visible display of the infinite riches of his grace and kindness, which was

*showered upon us in Jesus Christ. ⁸ **For by grace you have been saved by faith. Nothing you did could ever earn this salvation, for it was the love gift from God that brought us to Christ! ⁹ So no one will ever be able to boast, for salvation is never a reward for good works or human striving.** Ephesians 2:7-9 TPT*

The first mandatory baptism is performed **by** the Holy Spirit, **in** the Body of Christ **unto** Salvation.

OUR NEW BIRTH

Few people, I believe, truly understand that a new birth could only take place after Jesus' first appearance. Jesus explains to Nicodemus that we cannot **see** the Kingdom of God unless we be born again (John 3:3). Interpreting "see" as being able to "visualise/imagine", I always use the example of erecting a house. I first need to visualise the house in my mind before that house can manifest in the physical realm. Likewise, before the Kingdom of God can manifest in the physical realm, it must first be visible in the mind.

Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot **enter** into the Kingdom of God (John 3:5). Scriptures are clear that we cannot ENTER unless we come out of the water, which implies baptism INTO Christ. This is the only way to die with Christ, be buried with Him and be resurrected with Christ.

At Pentecost, 50 days after Jesus' resurrection, the Holy Spirit was poured out onto 120 men in the upper room. After that, the baptism of John was no longer valid.

Now that the Holy Spirit has been poured out onto all flesh, He brings us to the place where we truly believe that Yehôvâh Elohim (the plural form of Elohah, referring to the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit) exists, and the Messiah is the only One who can bring us back into right standing before the Father (*believing unto righteousness*). We now openly confess it with our mouths and make it unto salvation. This happens supernaturally. It is something our human mind cannot comprehend. Only the Holy Spirit can baptise you into the Body of Christ.

For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.
Romans 10:10 KJV

Paul explains:

For we were all baptized by one Spirit so as to form one body--whether Jews or Gentiles, slave or free--and we were all given the one Spirit to drink.
1 Corinthians 12:13 NIV

The exact moment we accept Adonai as our Lord and Saviour, we are baptised by one Spirit into one body, in the twinkling of an eye!

For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. Galatians 3:27 KJV

This is an act of the Holy Spirit, who supernaturally, without our participation, puts us into the Body of Christ. This is called baptism by the Spirit into the Body of Christ. This is the "one body, one Spirit and one baptism."

There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; ⁵ One Lord, one faith, one baptism, ⁶ One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

Ephesians 4:4-6 KJV

This baptism accompanies salvation but there is nothing you can do to receive this baptism except to repent and call on Jesus as your Lord and Saviour. The Holy Spirit takes over from there. From that moment on, you are in Christ. This is grace at work in its fullness! **Congratulations** on your new life! You are a **new creation man!**

Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things become new.

2 Corinthians 5:17 KJV

We are made **perfect** and now have **the mind of Christ!**

That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. 2 Timothy 3:17 KJV

For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

1 Corinthians 2:16 KJV

We now have the **measure of Faith!** This is the same faith Jesus had!

...according as God hath dealt to every man 'THE measure of faith.' Romans 12:3b KJV

Our newborn spirit is as perfect as Christ, vacuum-packed and **sealed** with the Holy Spirit and it will never change again!

*In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were **sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise**.* Ephesians 1:13 KJV

We lay down the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts. We put on the new self, created after the likeness of God in true righteousness and holiness (Ephesians 4:22, 24).

*I am writing these things to all of you, my little children, **because your sins have been forgiven in the name of Jesus our Savior.*** ¹³ *I am saying these things to you older men because you really know Christ, the one who has been alive from the beginning. And you young men, I am talking to you **because you have won your battle with Satan.** And I am writing to you younger boys and girls because you, too, have **learned to know God our Father.***
1 John 2:12-13 TLB

Stop loving this evil world and all that it offers you, for when you love these things you show that you do not really love God; ¹⁶ ***for all these worldly things, these evil desires—the craze for sex, the ambition to buy everything that appeals to you, and the pride that comes from wealth and importance—these are not from God. They are from this evil world itself.*** ¹⁷ *And this world is fading away, and these evil, forbidden things will go with it, but whoever keeps doing the will of God will live forever.* 1 John 2:15-17 TLB.

*Dear children, **this world's last hour has come.** You have heard about the Antichrist who is coming—the one who is against Christ—and already many such persons have appeared. This makes us all the more certain that the end of the world is near. ¹⁹ These "against-Christ" people used to be members of our churches, but they never really belonged with us or else they would have stayed. When they left us it proved that they were not of us at all. ²⁰ But you are not like that, for the Holy Spirit has come upon you, and you know the truth. ²¹ So I am not writing to you as to those who need to know the truth, but **I warn you as those who can discern the difference between true and false.** 1 John 2:18-21 TLB*

*Those who obey their **human nature cannot please God.** ⁹ But you do not live as your human nature tells you to; instead, **you live as the Spirit** tells you to - if, in fact, God's Spirit lives in you. Whoever does not have the Spirit of Christ does not belong to him. ¹⁰ But if Christ lives in you, the Spirit is life for you because you have been put right with God, even though your bodies are going to die because of sin. ¹¹ If the Spirit of God, who raised Jesus from death, lives in you, then he who raised Christ from death will also give life to your mortal bodies by the presence of his Spirit in you. Romans 8:8-11 GNB*

*Those who are children of God do not continue to sin, for God's very nature is in them; and because God is their Father, **they cannot continue to sin.** 1 John 3:9 GNB*

As a new creature, you can come to Jesus to drink from the living waters when you are thirsty. Streams of living water will pour from your innermost being.

On the last and most important day of the festival Jesus stood up and said in a loud voice, "Whoever is thirsty should come to me, and ³⁸ whoever believes in me should drink. As the scripture says, 'Streams of life-giving water will pour out from his side.' John 7:37-38 GNB

This is the first essential baptism. It is performed by the Holy Spirit so we can make it unto salvation.

SAUL OF TARUS

Saul persecuted the early church. One day, on his way to Damascus, the Lord appeared to him and he was converted. The conversion of Saul is proof of the steps required to become a follower and disciple of Yashuah.

Paul said the following about himself:

I am a Jewish man who was born in Tarsus, a city of Turkey. However, I grew up in this city and was properly trained in the Mosaic law and tutored by Rabbi Gamaliel according to our ancestral customs. I've been extremely passionate in my desire to please God, just as all of you are today ⁴ I've hunted down and killed the followers of this Way. I have seized them and thrown them into prison, both men and women. ⁵ All of this can be verified by the high priest and the Supreme Council of Elders. For they

even wrote letters to our fellow Jews of Damascus, authorizing me to arrest them and bring them back to Jerusalem as prisoners to be punished. ⁶ "As I was on the road approaching Damascus, about noon, a brilliant heavenly light suddenly appeared, flashing all around me. ⁷ As I fell to the ground I heard a voice say, 'Saul, Saul... why are you persecuting me?' ⁸ **"I answered, 'Who are you, my Lord?'** "He said to me, 'I am Jesus, the Victorious. I am the one you are persecuting.' ⁹ "Those who were with me saw the brilliant light, but they didn't hear the voice of the one who spoke to me. ¹⁰ **"So I asked, 'Lord, what am I to do?'** "And the Lord said to me, 'Get up and go into Damascus, and there you will be told about all that you are destined to do.' ¹¹ "Because of the dazzling glory of the light, I couldn't see—I was left blind. So they had to lead me by the hand the rest of the way into Damascus. Acts 22:3-11 TPT

Saul had a life-changing encounter with the Lord. Again, there was a **confrontation**! When he cried out, "Who are you, Lord?", it resembled the same protocol as with Peter when the Lord asked His disciples, "Who do you say I am?" After a **confrontation** with who the Lord is, there will be a **revelation**!

The Lord answered Saul's question by saying that He was the victorious One, Jesus of Nazareth, whom Saul had persecuted. Saul responded to that revelation with an **acknowledgment**. He embraced the revelation by asking, "What shall I do?"

Notice Paul's repentance and change of heart. The Holy Spirit baptised Saul without the intervention of any person. It was an act of grace.

When the moment came, even the hard-hearted Saul received a changed heart!

After his conversion, he did not hesitate to boldly make a public **confession** of his faith. Yashuah commanded Saul to get up and go into the city of Damascus. There, He would tell him what to do by sending another believer, Ananias, to Saul.

A Jewish man living there named Ananias came to see me. He was a godly man who lived according to the law of Moses and was highly esteemed by the Jewish community. ¹³ He stood beside me and said, 'Saul! My brother, Saul—open your eyes and see again!' At that very instant I opened my eyes and I could see! ¹⁴ Then he said to me, 'The God of our ancestors has destined you to know his plan and for you to see the Holy One and to hear his voice. ¹⁵ For you will be his witness to every race of people and will share with them everything that you've seen and heard. ¹⁶ So now, what are you waiting for? Get up, be baptized, and wash away your sins as you call upon his name.' Acts 22:12-16 TPT

The Lord commanded Ananias to go to the street called Straight and ask for Saul of Tarsus (Acts 9:11). He had to inform Saul he was a chosen vessel unto God to bear His name before the Gentiles, kings, and the children of Israel (Acts 9:15).

And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house; and putting his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy

*sight, **and be filled with the Holy Ghost.*** ¹⁸ *And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.* Acts 9:17-18 KJV

Ananias laid hands on Saul to restore his sight. The message he had for Saul was clear: "What are you waiting for, Saul? Get up, be baptised, and wash away your sins as you call upon His name!"

Why do we postpone being baptised? New believers should immediately be baptised! There is no scriptural indication that we should first attend a discipleship course, bear fruit, or comply with any other requirements before being baptised for the washing away of our sins.

Ananias laid hands on Saul not only to receive his sight but also to receive the Holy Ghost. Then he arose and was baptised. Notice the urgency with which Ananias demanded that Saul be baptised and have his sins washed away.

So now, what are you waiting for? Get up, be baptized, and wash away your sins as you call upon his name.
Acts 22:16 TPT

The early church understood conversion, and to them, a born-again experience was a package deal.

After the outpouring of the Holy Ghost, the people were cut to the heart.

*When they heard this they were crushed and realized what they had done to Jesus. Deeply moved, they said to Peter and the other apostles, "**What do we need to do, brothers?**"* ³⁸ *Peter replied, "**Repent and return to God, and each one of you must be baptized in the name of***

Jesus, the Anointed One, to have your sins removed. Then you may take hold of the gift of the Holy Spirit. ³⁹ For God's promise of the Holy Spirit is for you and your families, for those yet to be born and for everyone whom the Lord our God calls to himself." Peter preached to them and warned them with these words: 'Be rescued from the wayward and perverse culture of this world!' Acts 2:37-40 TPT

We must **repent**, have **faith** in Christ, be **baptised** for the remission and washing away of sins and **receive the Holy Ghost**.

We must follow and obey what the scriptures teach and not what man's opinions, traditions or denominations expect of us. Ask the Holy Spirit to reveal the truth to you as you read the following.

*And that **repentance and remission of sins** should be proclaimed in His name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. Luke 24:47 MKJV*

*He who believes and is **baptized will be saved**, but he who does not believe will be condemned. Mark 16:16 MKJV*

Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ to remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. Acts 2:38 MKJV

Why do we delay? Ananias asked Paul why he tarried. He needed to be baptised! The story of Philip and the Ethiopian man on the desert route to Gaza, proves that we should not tarry! Directly after the Holy Spirit had convinced the eunuch to believe in the Messiah, he was keen to be baptised!

*And as they continued along on the way, they came to some water, and the eunuch exclaimed, **See, [here is] water! What is to hinder my being baptized?***³⁷ *And Philip said, **If you believe with all your heart [if you have a conviction, full of joyful trust, that Jesus is the Messiah and accept Him as the Author of your salvation in the kingdom of God, giving Him your obedience, then] you may. And he replied, I do believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.***³⁸ *And he ordered that the chariot be stopped; and both Philip and the eunuch went down into the water, and [Philip] baptized him. Acts 8:36-38 AMPC*

If you believe with your heart and confess with your mouth (Romans 10:10), you immediately qualify for the believer's baptism, which is being baptised by a believer in water unto righteousness.

*And baptism, which is a figure [of their deliverance], does now also save you [from inward questionings and fears], not by the removing of outward body filth [bathing], but by [providing you with] the answer of a good and **clear conscience** (inward cleanness and peace) before God [because you are demonstrating what you believe to be yours] through the resurrection of Jesus Christ. 1 Peter 3:21 AMPC*

This was a prophetic picture of the immersion that now saves you—not a bathing of the physical body but rather the response of a good conscience before God through the resurrection of Jesus Christ,²² who is now in heaven at the place of supreme authority next to God. The very powers

*of heaven, including every angel and authority, now yield
in submission to him.* 1 Peter 3:21-22 TPT

It can't be said any clearer! When we go into the water, our old nature is buried, and we receive a clear conscience before God. This is right standing before Adonai. We arise from the water into a new resurrected life as a new creation man!

We rarely obey the fundamental Doctrine of Christ. Today, I am a “cry in the wilderness”, preparing the way for the Messiah and making His paths straight (Mark 1:3).

The Significance of this Baptism

WE NEED A BORN-AGAIN EXPERIENCE.

Jesus answered, I assure you, most solemnly I tell you unless a man is born of water and [even] the Spirit, he cannot [ever] enter the kingdom of God. John 3:5 AMPC [Ezekiel 36:25-27.]

WE DIED WITH JESUS AND WERE RAISED WITH HIM. HE DISARMED THE EVIL PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS.

*In Him also you were circumcised with a circumcision not made with hands, but in a [spiritual] circumcision [performed by] Christ by **stripping off the body of the flesh** (the whole corrupt, carnal nature with its passions and lusts). ¹² [Thus you were circumcised when] **you were buried with Him in [your] baptism**, in which you were*

also **raised with Him** [to a new life] through [your] faith in the working of God [as displayed] when He raised Him up from the dead. ¹³ And you who were dead in trespasses and in the uncircumcision of your flesh (your sensuality, **your sinful carnal nature**), **[God] brought to life together with [Christ]**, having [freely] **forgiven us all our transgressions**, ¹⁴ Having cancelled and blotted out and wiped away the handwriting of the note (bond) with its legal decrees and demands which was in force and stood against us (hostile to us). This [note with its regulations, decrees, and demands] He set aside and cleared completely out of our way by nailing it to [His] cross. ¹⁵ **[God] disarmed the principalities and powers that were ranged against us** and made a bold display and public example of them, in triumphing over them in Him and in it [the cross]. Colossians 2:11-15 AMPC

WE SHOULD CONSIDER OURSELVES DEAD TO SIN BUT ALIVE WITH GOD!

Are you ignorant of the fact that all of us who have been baptized into Christ Jesus **were baptized into His death?** ⁴ We **were buried therefore with Him by the baptism into death**, so that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glorious [power] of the Father, so we too might [habitually] live and behave in newness of life. ⁵ For if we have become one with Him by sharing a death like His, **we shall also be [one with Him in sharing] His resurrection [by a new life lived for God]**. ⁶ **We know**

that our old (unrenewed) self was nailed to the cross with Him in order that [our] body [which is the instrument] of sin might be made ineffective and inactive for evil, that we might **no longer be the slaves of sin**.⁷ For when a man dies, he is freed (loosed, delivered) from [the power of] sin [among men].⁸ **Now if we have died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him,**⁹ Because we know that Christ (the Anointed One), being once raised from the dead, will never die again; death no longer has power over Him.¹⁰ For by the death He died, He died to sin [ending His relation to it] once for all; and the life that He lives, He is living to God [in unbroken fellowship with Him].¹¹ Even so consider yourselves also dead to sin and your relation to it broken, but alive to God [living in unbroken fellowship with Him] in Christ Jesus. Romans 6:3-11 AMPC

BE CLOTHED WITH CHRIST.

For in Christ Jesus you are all **sons of God through faith**.²⁷ For as many [of you] as were baptized into Christ [into a spiritual union and communion with Christ, the Anointed One, the Messiah] have put on (**clothed yourselves with**) **Christ**.²⁸ There is [now no distinction] neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is not male and female; for you are all **one in Christ Jesus**. Galatians 3:26-28 AMPC

WE SHOULD HAVE THE MIND OF CHRIST.

*For who has known or understood the mind (the counsels and purposes) of the Lord so as to guide and instruct Him and give Him knowledge? **But we have the mind of Christ (the Messiah) and do hold the thoughts (feelings and purposes) of His heart.***

1 Corinthians 2:16 AMPC [Isaiah 40:13.]

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

² *And be not conformed to this world: but be ye **transformed by the renewing of your mind**, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.* Romans 12:1-2 KJV

THERE IS ONLY ONE LORD, ONE FAITH, ONE BAPTISM.

[There is] one body and one Spirit--just as there is also one hope [that belongs] to the calling you received

⁵ *[There is] **one Lord, one faith, one baptism**,* ⁶ *One God and Father of [us] all, Who is above all [Sovereign over all], pervading all and [living] in [us] all. ⁷ Yet grace (God's unmerited favor) was given to each of us individually [not indiscriminately, but in different ways] in proportion to the measure of Christ's [rich and bounteous] gift.* Ephesians 4:4-7 AMPC

WE ARE BAPTISED INTO ONE BODY.

For by [means of the personal agency of] one [Holy] Spirit we were all, whether Jews or Greeks, slaves or free, baptized [and by baptism united together] into one body, and all made to drink of one [Holy] Spirit.

1 Corinthians 12:13 AMPC

WE CLEANSE THE BODY WITH PURE WATER.

*Let us all come forward and draw near with true (honest and sincere) hearts in unqualified assurance and absolute conviction engendered by **faith** (by that leaning of the entire human personality on God in absolute trust and confidence in His power, wisdom, and goodness), having our hearts sprinkled and purified from a guilty (evil) conscience and our **bodies cleansed with pure water.***

Hebrews 10:22 AMPC

Jesus answered, I assure you, most solemnly I tell you, unless a man is born of water and [even] the Spirit, he cannot [ever] enter the kingdom of God. [Ezekiel 36:25-27] ⁶ What is born of [from] the flesh is flesh [of the physical is physical]; and what is born of the Spirit is spirit.

John 3:5-6 AMPC

WE NOW BECOME SONS AND DAUGHTERS OF THE KINGDOM.

You are now part of the family and the Kingdom of God Almighty. You are part of the Body of Christ!

*For [the Spirit which] you have now received [is] not a spirit of slavery to put you once more in bondage to fear, but you have received the **Spirit of adoption [the Spirit producing sonship] in [the bliss of] which we cry, Abba (Father)! Father!*** Romans 8:15 AMPC

*Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is **a new creature: old things are passed away;** behold, all things are become new.* 2 Corinthians 5:17 KJV

SIGNS FOR THOSE WHO BELIEVE.

And these attesting signs will accompany those who believe: in My name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new languages;¹⁸ They will pick up serpents; and [even] if they drink anything deadly, it will not hurt them; they will lay their hands on the sick, and they will get well.¹⁹ So then the Lord Jesus, after He had spoken to them, was taken up into heaven and He sat down at the right hand of God. Mark 16:17-19 AMPC [Ps. 110:1]

PETER'S TEACHING AFTER RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT

RELEASED FROM SINS.

*Now when they heard this they were stung (cut) to the heart, and they said to Peter and the rest of the apostles (special messengers), Brethren, what shall we do?³⁸ And Peter answered them, **Repent** (change your views and purpose to accept the will of God in your inner selves*

*instead of rejecting it) and be **baptized**, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of and **release from your sins**; and you shall receive the gift of **the Holy Spirit**. Acts 2:37-38 AMPC*

*Therefore those who accepted and welcomed his message **were baptized**, and there were added that day about 3,000 souls. Acts 2:41 AMPC*

BAPTISM IS IMPORTANT TO GOD.

If baptism was not important to God, the Spirit would have transported Philip directly after he had preached to the eunuch. But the Spirit took Philip away only **AFTER** the man had been baptised. Also, keep in mind that even Jesus was baptised even though He had no SIN!

*Then **Philip** opened his mouth, and beginning with this **portion of Scripture he announced to him the glad tidings (Gospel) of Jesus and about Him.** ³⁶ And as they continued along on the way, they came to some water, and the eunuch exclaimed, See, [here is] water! **What is to hinder my being baptized?** ³⁷ And Philip said, If you believe with all your heart [if you have a conviction, full of joyful trust, that Jesus is the Messiah and accept Him as the Author of your salvation in the kingdom of God, giving Him your obedience, then] you may. And he replied, I do believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. ³⁸ And he ordered that the chariot be stopped; **and both Philip and the eunuch went down into the water, and [Philip] baptized him.** ³⁹ And when they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord [suddenly] **caught away Philip**; and*

the eunuch saw him no more, and he went on his way rejoicing. Acts 8:35-39 AMPC

PETER WAS STILL SPEAKING WHEN THE HOLY SPIRIT FELL ON THE PEOPLE, EVEN BEFORE THEY WERE BAPTISED WITH WATER.

*While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all who were listening to the message. ⁴⁵ And the believers from among the circumcised [the Jews] who came with Peter were surprised and amazed because the free gift of the Holy Spirit had been bestowed and poured out largely even on the Gentiles. ⁴⁶ For they heard them talking in [unknown] tongues (languages) and extolling and magnifying God. Then Peter asked, ⁴⁷ **Can anyone forbid or refuse water for baptizing these people, seeing that they have received the Holy Spirit just as we have?** Acts 10:44-47 AMPC*

PAUL MINISTERED TO PEOPLE AND STRAIGHT AWAY AFTER THEY BELIEVED, HE BAPTISED THEM IN THE SAME HOUR.

*And he took them the same hour of the night and bathed [them because of their bloody] wounds, and he **was baptized immediately and all [the members of] his [household].** Acts 16:33 AMPC*

PAUL'S TESTIMONY OF HIS OWN BAPTISM.

*And instantly something like scales fell from [Saul's] eyes, and he recovered his sight. Then he arose and was **baptized.** Act 9:18 AMPC*

MORE EXAMPLES OF PEOPLE WHO WERE BAPTISED.

*But Crispus, the leader of the synagogue, believed [that Jesus is the Messiah and acknowledged Him with joyful trust as Savior and Lord], together with his entire household; and many of the Corinthians who listened [to Paul also] **believed and were baptized.*** Acts 18:8 AMPC

*Came to see me, and standing by my side said to me, Brother Saul, look up and receive back your sight. And in that very instant I [recovered my sight and] looking up saw him. ¹⁴ And he said, The God of our forefathers has destined and appointed you to come progressively to know His will [to perceive, to recognize more strongly and clearly, and to become better and more intimately acquainted with His will], and to see the Righteous One (Jesus Christ, the Messiah), and to hear a voice from His [own] mouth and a message from His [own] lips; ¹⁵ For you will be His witness unto all men of everything that you have seen and heard. ¹⁶ And now, why do you delay? **Rise and be baptized, and by calling upon His name, wash away your sins.*** Acts 22:13-16 AMPC

Because of wrong doctrine, many born-again people believe they have already received the Holy Spirit and the Holy Spirit already lives inside of them. The scripture teaches us differently.

*When he had said this, he **breathed on them and told them, "Receive the Holy Spirit."*** John 20:22 ISV

This must have been an act of salvation because just before Jesus ascended to Heaven, He commanded the very same group of people to not leave Jerusalem but wait for the Holy Spirit!

*While he was meeting with them, he ordered them, "**Don't leave Jerusalem. Instead, wait for what the Father has promised**, about which you heard me speak. For John baptized with water, but you will be **baptized with the Holy Spirit** a few days from now. Acts 1:4 ISV*

*But you will **receive power** when the **Holy Spirit comes on you**, and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth. Acts 1:8 NIV*

We will receive **power** when we receive the Holy Spirit. The Body of Christ has become powerless because of the absence of the baptism of the Holy Spirit. We need to tap into this source not only to speak the Gospel but to demonstrate God's Kingdom with signs and wonders.

For the kingdom of God is not in word but in power.

1 Corinthians 4:20 KJV

We cannot exercise our authority, nor do what Jesus commanded, namely, heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, and cast out devils (Mat 10:8) unless we receive the Holy Ghost and His power!

*How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the **Holy Ghost and with power**: who went about doing good, and **healing** all that were **oppressed of the devil**; for God was with him. Acts 10:38 KJV*

*And Stephen, **full of faith and power**, did great **wonders** and **miracles** among the people. Acts 6:8 KJV*

Don't resist the power of God! Receive the Holy Spirit and the power and start demonstrating it, as Jesus commanded!

*Let every **soul be in subjection to the higher powers**: for there is no power but of God; and the **powers that be are ordained of God**.² Therefore he that **resisteth the power**, withstandeth the ordinance of God: and they that withstand shall receive to themselves judgment. Romans 13:1-2 ASV*

*And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in **demonstration of the Spirit and of power**: That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God. 1 Corinthians 2:4-5 KJV*

The Believer's Baptism

This baptism is sometimes called the believer's baptism or the Christian baptism. It is our water baptism and follows salvation. If you were baptised before salvation took place, the baptism would be of no value. Water baptism is the burial of the old man. The old man must die!

Yashuah commanded us to be baptised! Those who do not go through a water baptism struggle for the rest of their lives to obey Adonai.

Remember, we are laying down the foundation to restore the temple of God. Although some instructions given to us in the Bible are not essential for salvation, they are still requirements for living a holy and

obedient life. Believers sometimes ignore these requirements, resulting in foundations giving in and houses collapsing. Yashuah commanded us to be immersed for a reason, namely, that all righteousness be fulfilled. Therefore, my beloved, this baptism is essential for receiving a clear **conscience**. It gives us right standing before Adonai and enables us to walk in righteousness.

JOHN THE BAPTIST

John the Baptist's ministry was brief but crucial. He appeared on the scene as a voice in the wilderness to prepare the way for the Messiah. He was the bridge between two dispensations - the dispensation of the law and the prophets, and the dispensation of grace and the Gospel of Jesus Christ. His message was different from any preceding messages - "*Repent and be baptized for the complete cancellation of sins.*"

*It starts with Isaiah the prophet, who wrote: Listen! I am sending my messenger ahead of you and he will prepare your way! ³ He is a thunderous voice of one who shouts in the wilderness: "Prepare your hearts for the coming of the Lord Yahweh, and clear a straight path inside your hearts for him!" ⁴ John the Baptizer was the messenger who appeared in the wilderness, preaching a **baptism of repentance for the complete cancellation of sins** ⁵ A steady stream of people came to be dipped in the Jordan River as they publicly confessed their sins. They came from all over southern Israel, including nearly all the inhabitants of Jerusalem. Mark 1:2-5 TPT*

The Messiah could not come unless the hearts of the people were prepared for repentance. Likewise, the 2nd coming of Christ shall occur only when the hearts of people have been prepared for His return.

WATER BAPTISM

The Bible teaches two water baptisms, both IN something and UNTO something.

Firstly, the baptism of John the Baptist IN water unto repentance. This is also referred to as the baptism of repentance.

Secondly, the baptism IN the Name of the Lord Jesus UNTO Christ, also referred to as the "Christian baptism".

When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. Acts 19:5 KJV

There is much confusion and a lack of true understanding of the New Testament believer's baptism. In Ephesus, Paul asked certain disciples if they had received the Holy Ghost since they believed. They replied that they had never heard of the Holy Ghost. Paul asked them unto what then were they baptised and they responded by saying unto John's baptism. Paul then explained they had been baptised with the baptism of repentance but should still be baptised in the name of the Lord Jesus. (Acts 19:1-10).

Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on

Christ Jesus. ⁵ **When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.**

Acts 19:4-5 KJV

When someone is immersed, he is baptised in the Name of Jesus. It is important to know the person is also baptised INTO Christ.

For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. Galatians 3:26-27 KJV

This baptism is essential for being a disciple of Christ! Many denominations merely educate and accommodate their church members. They never guide them into being disciples of Yashuah. They mostly make disciples for their own ministries and not necessarily for the Kingdom of Yashuah. Idle church members and disciples will misrepresent the truth.

We need to be disciples of Christ!

Jesus was circumcised as an eight-day-old baby. It is considered general knowledge that water baptism replaced circumcision. Yet, the same denominations believing this are silent about why this same circumcised Baby was later immersed in water. Jesus did not have any sin to repent for and yet He was baptised. This confirms that baptism in water unto repentance is not a requirement for the New Testament believers.

Satan tries everything in his power to blind the believers from seeing the glory of Christ, His image, and His likeness!

For the God of this world has blinded the unbelievers' minds [that they should not discern the truth], preventing them from seeing the illuminating light of the Gospel of the

*glory of Christ (the Messiah), **Who is the Image and Likeness of God.** 2 Corinthians 4:4 AMPC*

Let us put on the full armor of light so the glory of Christ can manifest in and through us!

*Besides this you know what [a critical] hour this is, how it is high time now for you to wake up out of your sleep (rouse to reality). For **salvation (final deliverance) is nearer** to us now than when we first believed (adhered to, trusted in, and relied on Christ, the Messiah). ¹² The night is far gone and the day is almost here. **Let us then drop (flying away) the works and deeds of darkness and put on the [full] armor of light.** ¹³ Let us live and conduct ourselves honorably and becomingly as in the [open light of] day, not in reveling (carousing) and drunkenness, not in immorality and debauchery (sensuality and licentiousness), not in quarreling and jealousy. ¹⁴ **But clothe yourself with the Lord Jesus Christ** (the Messiah), and make no provision for [indulging] the flesh [put a stop to thinking about the evil cravings of your physical nature] to [gratify its] desires (lusts). Romans 13:11-14 AMPC*

The sprinkling of babies in the religious system is not only insufficient but completely unscriptural and senseless. The Bible is clear that faith in Jesus is a prerequisite for baptism. In Greek, the word “**baptism**” is “**Baptizo**”, which means “to immerse; to dunk, to submerge”. **It does not mean to sprinkle!**” Also, a person is not scripturally baptised if it was done before true conversion. An infant or young child cannot be converted.

*And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; **what doth hinder me to be baptized?***³⁷ *And Philip said, If thou **believest with all thine heart**, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. Acts 8:36-37 KJV*

*And Philip said If you believe with all your heart [**if you have a conviction, full of joyful trust, that Jesus is the Messiah and accept Him as the Author of your salvation in the kingdom of God, giving Him your obedience, then**] you may. And he replied I do believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. Acts 8:37 AMPC*

THE BLOOD OF JESUS

We cannot be qualified to receive the presence of God into our lives unless the Blood of Jesus cleanses us and makes way for the return of God's Spirit to our human temples. The key to the continuous work of Jesus in each of us is the Holy Spirit. When the Spirit is alive in us, He restores the presence of God in our lives and leads us into the holiness that was our birthright at creation. The Holy Spirit is God. He is the key to being returned to God's presence.

UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS

The Holy Spirit revealed to me a deep truth regarding Jacob's struggle with the Angel. On the night Jacob, whose name means "deceiver",

struggled with the Angel, the Angel hit him on his thigh and he was permanently crippled.

And when he saw that he prevailed not against him, he touched the hollow of his thigh; and the hollow of Jacob's thigh was out of joint, as he wrestled with him.

Genesis 32:25 KJV

Jacob, as the man in the flesh, overcame. His name was changed to Israel, which refers to the spiritual man. He then called out, "*I have seen Adonai face to face, and my soul was saved*" (verse 30). In contrast, Esau, which means "**reddish**" refers to the nature of Adam, the old man in the flesh. Esau never overcame. His name was changed to Edom. Jacob and Esau became a typology* of the man in the flesh (*Esau/Edom*), and the new spiritual man as an overcomer (*Jacob*). He now walks in righteousness (*Israel*). Very relevant that it was the Edomites who later prevented Israel from entering the promised land!

*** A typology is a Christian theology involving the interpretation of some figures and events in the Old Testament as foreshadowing events in the New Testament.**

How is Jacob's struggle with the Angel relevant to baptism? Here is the key:

And he has on his garment and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

Revelation 19:16 JUB

The Angel hit Jacob on his thigh, after which he received a new name of righteousness. Jacob, as Israel, now represents the new creation man – the man in the spirit. It is no coincidence that the name of the King of Kings is written on His thigh. He is our King of Righteousness.

Russell Stendal wrote the following.

“All of those who have come to maturity in the life of Christ will participate with Jesus as joint heirs in Christ. His garment is his covering, and the Holy Spirit covers all those who walk in his righteousness. **His thigh has to do with his ability to walk in righteousness.** He is able to cover us and cause us to walk in righteousness with him because he is KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS. He has all authority everywhere. The name written on his garment and on his thigh means that all his promises will be fulfilled.”

Stendal, Russell M. Revelation Unveiled: Understanding the Heart of Jesus in the Imminent Day of the Lord (pp. 221-222). Aneko Press. Kindle Edition.

When Jesus came to John the Baptist to be baptised by him, John replied that he was not worthy to do so. Yashuah insisted, so all righteousness could be fulfilled.

But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? ¹⁵ And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him.
Matthew 3:14-15 KJV

Yashuah was baptised to give us right standing before the Father. This act restored the human race to its position before the fall. What a divine revelation!

**Baptism in water confirms our old nature is now
buried with Christ to fulfil all righteousness.**

**We are therefore baptised IN water UNTO
righteousness which gives us right standing
before Christ Jesus.**

FULFILLING ALL RIGHTEOUSNESS

Jesus' baptism was for the fulfilment of all righteousness. All three Godheads (*Triunity*) were present - the Son, the Holy Spirit who descended like a dove, and the Father who presented Himself in an audible voice.

And Jesus, after he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water; and, behold, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and "lighting" upon him; Matthew 3:16 JUB

Notice that the "dove and lighting" were upon the Son. The New King James Version uses the word "**alight**". As a verb, it means "descending from the air and settling (**of a bird**)". As an adjective, it means "on fire, set on fire, burning".

The Spirit of Adonai descended like a dove from the sky, settled on Him and set Him on fire!

Glory to GOD! The Son was baptised INTO the Holy Ghost! The Father spoke the following words in an audible voice.

And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Matthew 3:17 KJV

After baptism in water into Christ, the Father sees us as having the image we had before the fall.

*You perceive **how God sees you in the mirror of the Word**, but then you go out and forget your divine origin.
²⁵ But those who set their gaze deeply into the perfecting **law of liberty** are fascinated by and respond to the truth they hear and are strengthened by it—they experience God’s blessing in all that they do! James 1:24-25 TPT*

As explained earlier, “seeing the man **in the mirror**” means seeing ourselves as God has been seeing us from the beginning, even before the fall of Adam which resulted in sin’s devastation to human hearts. The man in the mirror is the new creation man. We all fall short of seeing the new creation man in the mirror! The devil constantly reminds us of the past, of the old man in the flesh. This is double-mindedness. Baptism into Christ brings us back to this state of righteousness and gives us right standing before the Father.

There is nothing to add to this Gospel!

James says we are brought into the perfect law of liberty. At last, we have freedom! Christ has set us free! We must cherish this truth and firmly refuse to return to the bondage of the past (Galatians 5:1 TPT).

Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: ² By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. Romans 5:1-2 KJV

Because of water baptism into Christ, we are now justified and we have peace with Adonai. The word “**justify**” in Greek is “**dikaioo**”.

dikaioō

dik-ah-yo'-o

to render (that is, show or regard as) just or innocent: - free, justify, be righteous.

This means we are:

Acquitted.

Declared not guilty.

Reckoned righteous.

Made righteous.

This is grace and mercy at its highest level! We need to fully capture this profound truth. This is why Paul insists that there is just one Lord, one Faith and one Baptism. Many believers forfeit their right standing before God because of a lack of knowledge or unwillingness to be immersed in water into Christ Jesus! After baptism into Christ, we are dead to sin.

Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? ⁴ Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.
Romans 6:3-4 KJV

We are clothed with Christ and are a new creation man.

*For as many [of you] as were baptized into Christ [into a spiritual union and communion with Christ, the Anointed One, the Messiah] have put on (**clothed yourselves with**) **Christ**. ²⁸ There is [now no distinction] neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is not male and female; for you are all **one in Christ Jesus**.*
Galatians 3:27-28 AMPC

When we are clothed with Christ, there is no distinction between male and female, rich and poor, or between ethnic races, as we are now one in Christ! We are indeed sons and daughters in a new family which is the Body of Christ.

Baptism is a commitment to identify with His death, burial, and resurrection. Baptism in water into Christ represents baptism into His death. We died with Him, were raised with Him, and now experience a completely different and new kind of life. The Holy Spirit raised Yashuah from the dead and we, too, will be raised from the dead by the Holy Spirit. We come to the end of our old Adam nature at baptism. When we rise out of the water, we become like Him. His resurrection reversed the decision of a criminal's death.

Before Yashuah ascended into heaven, He commanded His disciples:

Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: ²⁰ Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.
Matthew 28:19-20 KJV

He did not command them to gather church members. Church members misrepresent the truth we proclaim. If there is no commitment in your heart to be a disciple of Christ, you do not have the right to be baptised. The church baptises people and then waits for them to commit. The Bible requires a commitment first and then immediate baptism, after which teaching follows to equip them in the Doctrine of Christ.

*And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. ¹⁶ He that **believeth and is***

baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. Mark 16:15-16 KJV

He that believes and is baptised shall be saved! The Bible teaches no delay and no equipping first. Only when you believe and are baptised, shall you be saved. Bearing fruit follows baptism and is not a requirement to be saved. Believing that Christ died, was buried, and raised from the dead on the third day is the only requirement.

Saints, I have been studying these scriptures for many years and find no proof of salvation without the result of baptism. The following experiences should, however, precede baptism:

We must have heard the Gospel.

We must have repented.

We must believe the Gospel.

We must have a good conscience toward God.

An infant cannot meet any of these conditions. That settles the inefficiency of the sprinkling of babies.

I believe that we often baptise pagans. The only change that takes place at their baptism is that they are dry before baptism and wet afterwards!

The following people understood the concept that salvation depended on this one mandatory baptism!

Three thousand believers were baptised immediately after Pentecost (Acts 2) because they believed and repented. The Ethiopian heard the Gospel and was immediately baptised by Philip (Acts 8). Cornelius' household was immersed from above, received the Holy Spirit and was immediately baptised in water into Christ.

An Act of Righteousness

Let us dig deep and lay down a good foundation regarding this topic. Paul explains that we are justified, declared righteous, and given right standing with Adonai.

Therefore, since we are justified (acquitted, declared righteous, and given a right standing with God) through faith, let us [grasp the fact that we] have [the peace of reconciliation to hold and to enjoy] peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One).
Romans 5:1 AMPC

Therefore, since we are now justified (acquitted, made righteous, and brought into right relationship with God) by Christ's blood, how much more [certain is it that] we shall be saved by Him from the indignation and wrath of God.
¹⁰*For if while we were enemies we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, it is much more [certain], now that we are reconciled, that we shall be saved (daily delivered from sin's dominion) through His [resurrection] life.* Romans 5:9-10 AMPC

We need water baptism to share in Yashuah's resurrection life.

Therefore, as sin came into the world through one man, and death as the result of sin, so death spread to all men, no one being able to stop it or to escape its power] because all men sinned. Romans 5:12 AMP

For if because of one man's trespass (lapse, offense) death reigned through that one, much more surely will those who receive [God's] overflowing grace (unmerited favor) and

the free gift of righteousness [putting them into right standing with Himself] reign as kings in life through the one Man Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One).

¹⁸ *Well then, as one man's trespass [one man's false step and falling away led] to condemnation for all men, **so one Man's act of righteousness** [leads] to acquittal and right standing with God and life for all men.* ¹⁹ *For just as by one man's disobedience (failing to hear, heedlessness, and carelessness) the many were constituted sinners, so by one Man's obedience the many will be constituted righteous (made acceptable to God, brought into right standing with Him).* ²⁰ *But then Law came in, [only] to expand and increase the trespass [making it more apparent and exciting opposition]. But where sin increased and abounded, grace (God's unmerited favor) has surpassed it and increased the more and superabounded,* ²¹ *So that, [just] as sin has reigned in death, [so] grace (His unearned and undeserved favor) might reign also through righteousness (right standing with God) which issues in eternal life through Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One) our Lord. Romans 5:17-21 AMPC*

Paul explains right standing before God in the next chapter.

What shall we say [to all this]? Are we to remain in sin in order that God's grace (favor and mercy) may multiply and overflow? Romans 6:1 AMPC

Of course not! God forbid! May it never even be suggested in any Bible translation! The Passion Translation considers it "a terrible thought". How could we take advantage of Adonai's grace?

*What a terrible thought! We have died to sin once and for all, as a dead man passes away from this life. So how could we live under sin's rule a moment longer? ³ Or have you forgotten that all of us who **were immersed into union with Jesus, the Anointed One, were immersed into union with his death?** Romans 6:2-3 TPT*

Clearly, there is death in sin. But our nature has changed. We are still human and commit sin, but it is not our nature to sin any longer.

*We were buried therefore with Him by the baptism into death, so that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glorious [power] of the Father, so we too might [habitually] live and behave in newness of life. ⁵ **For if we have become one with Him by sharing a death like His, we shall also be [one with Him in sharing] His resurrection [by a new life lived for God].** ⁶ We know that our old (unrenewed) self was nailed to the cross with Him in order that [our] body [which is the instrument] of sin might be made ineffective and inactive for evil, that we might **no longer be the slaves of sin.** ⁷ For when a man dies, he is freed (loosed, delivered) from [the power of] sin [among men]. ⁸ **Now if we have died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him,** ⁹ **Because we know that Christ (the Anointed One), being once raised from the dead, will never die again; death no longer has power over Him.** ¹⁰ For by the death He died, He died to sin [ending His relation to it] once for all; and the life that He lives, He is living to God [in unbroken fellowship with Him].¹¹ Even so consider yourselves also*

dead to sin and your relation to it broken, but alive to God [living in unbroken fellowship with Him] in Christ Jesus.

¹² Let not sin therefore rule as king in your mortal (short-lived, perishable) bodies, to make you yield to its cravings and be subject to its lusts and evil passions.

¹³ Do not continue offering or yielding your bodily members [and faculties] to sin as instruments (tools) of wickedness. But offer and yield yourselves to God as though you have been raised from the dead to [perpetual] life, and your bodily members [and faculties] to God, presenting them as implements of righteousness.

¹⁴ For sin shall not [any longer] exert dominion over you, since now you are not under law [as slaves], but under grace [as subjects of God's favor and mercy].

¹⁵ What then [are we to conclude]? Shall we sin because we live not under law but under God's favor and mercy? Certainly not!

¹⁶ Do you not know that if you continually surrender yourselves to anyone to do his will, you are the slaves of him whom you obey, whether that be to sin, which leads to death, or to obedience which leads to righteousness (right doing and right standing with God)?

¹⁷ But thank God, though you were once slaves of sin, you have become obedient with all your heart to the standard of teaching in which you were instructed and to which you were committed.

¹⁸ And having been set free from sin, you have become the servants of righteousness (of conformity to the divine will in thought, purpose, and action).

¹⁹ I am speaking in familiar human terms because of your natural limitations. For as you yielded your

*bodily members [and faculties] as servants to impurity and ever-increasing lawlessness, so now yield your bodily members [and faculties] once for all as servants to righteousness (right being and doing) [which leads] to **sanctification**. ²⁰For when you were slaves of sin, you were free in regard to righteousness. ²¹But then what benefit (return) did you get from the things of which you are now ashamed? [None] for the end of those things is death. ²²**But now since you have been set free from sin and have become the slaves of God, you have your present reward in holiness and its end is eternal life.** ²³For the wages which sin pays is death, but the [bountiful] free gift of God is eternal life through (in union with) Jesus Christ our Lord. Romans 6:4-23 AMPC*

Water baptism brings us unto a new MASTER of righteousness. Sin has no dominion over us anymore!

Arise and be baptized and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord. Acts 22:16 MKJV

Are you ignorant of the fact that all of us who have been baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death? Romans 6:3 AMPC

Our commitment is to be executed on the stake for the remission of sin.

For since we are permanently grafted into him to experience a death like his, then we are permanently grafted into him to experience a resurrection like his and the new life that it imparts. Romans 6:5 TPT

Don Krow told of a friend who led a witch to the Lord one evening. The next morning, the other witches came running to him, asking very anxiously:

“Did you baptise the witch? Did you baptise the witch?”

Transfer from one domain to another takes place during baptism! The witches knew it was over! Baptism is the cutting-off point.

The same happens in Jewish tradition. When family members get baptised, they are often expelled from the family. As New Testament believers, we are sometimes so arrogant because of a lack of knowledge! Water baptism is not merely a symbol but an essentiality to walk in righteousness.

***At last we have freedom, for Christ has set us free!
We must always cherish this truth and firmly refuse
to go back into the bondage of our past.***

Galatians 5:1 TPT

*Through our union with him we have experienced
circumcision of heart. All of the guilt and power of sin has
been cut away and is now extinct because of what Christ,
the Anointed One, has accomplished for us. ¹² For we've
been buried with him into his death. Our "baptism into
death" also means we were raised with him when we
believed in God's resurrection power, the power that raised
him from death's realm. Colossians 2:11-12 TPT*

*For in Christ Jesus you are all sons of God through faith.
²⁷ For as many [of you] as were baptized into Christ [into
a spiritual union and communion with Christ, the Anointed*

One, the Messiah] have put on (clothed yourselves with) Christ. Galatians 3:26-27 AMPC

And if you belong to Christ [are in Him Who is Abraham's Seed], then you are Abraham's offspring and [spiritual] heirs according to promise. Galatians 3:29 AMPC

In conclusion, when we go into the water for repentance of sin and with faith in Christ Jesus, we appeal to Adonai for a clear conscience. We come out of the water of spiritual circumcision of the old nature and now put on Christ. We clothe ourselves with the Anointed One.

The following scriptures bring further Biblical truths on baptism.

- Acts 8:12-15
- Acts 8:36-38
- Acts 9:18
- Acts 10:47
- Acts 16:15
- Acts 16:33
- Acts 19:5

This brings us to the next baptism, which is not essential for salvation, but essential for receiving power. The flesh will always manifest by trying to convince us that this baptism by Jesus in the Holy Spirit to receive power is not necessary. Satan does not want us to be baptised!

What do we need this power for? We receive Dunamis Power, or resurrection power, to stand against the wiles of the devil.

Baptism by Jesus

Most denominations call this baptism by Jesus, the baptism in the Holy Spirit. Yashuah was immersed in water to fulfill all righteousness. As He came out of the water, He was baptised in the Holy Spirit, who descended upon Him like a dove and set Him on fire.

Yehôvâh Elohim created man in His image and likeness, and since the fall, the Father has been desiring to restore and unite us back into Him. Therefore, we must put on His likeness.

Instead, clothe yourself with the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ. And don't let yourself think about ways to indulge your evil desires. Romans 13:14 NLT

And all who have been united with Christ in baptism have put on Christ, like putting on new clothes. Galatians 3:27 NLT

*I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: **he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.** Matthew 3:11 KJV*

Here we clearly see Yashuah as the Baptiser and the medium is the Holy Spirit. Jesus repeated John's words before His ascension into the heavens.

*For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall **be baptized with the Holy Ghost** not many days hence. Acts 1:5 KJV*

This occurred on the day of Pentecost in the upper room, where 120 men received their second baptism. They had received the first baptism and were already in Christ. This second baptism was an act performed by Yashuah Himself. This baptism, however, is not a requirement for salvation.

Many wrongly believe this baptism is optional and do not realise how essential it is for believers. The earlier churches never considered this baptism as optional, although it was not essential for salvation. It was required for another reason. **If you need spiritual power, you need this baptism of Jesus into the Holy Ghost.** It is freely available to every believer.

A SYMBOL OF GOD'S APPROVAL

The Holy Spirit baptism is a symbol of God's approval. Immediately after the baptism of Christ, the Spirit fell upon Him. God declared that Jesus was His Son with whom He was well pleased.

In Acts 10, the Gospel of Christ had not yet been extended to include the Gentiles. As a sign that God had granted salvation to both the Jews and the Gentiles, the Holy Spirit fell upon the centurion, Cornelius, and all those who heard the words of Peter (Acts 10:30-48). Upon seeing the sign of God's approval of the Gentiles, Peter remarked, "*Can anyone withhold water for baptizing these people, who have received the Holy Spirit just as we have?*" Immediately, they underwent baptism in the Name of Jesus Christ. The Spirit was poured out on "all flesh", both Jews and Gentiles, fulfilling the prophecy of Joel 2:28.

Jesus gave His disciples the reason they would be baptised into the Holy Spirit.

But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth. Acts 1:8 KJV

The word “**power**” is “**Dunamis**” in Greek, which means “miraculous power” or “might”.

G1411 (Strong’s)

dunamis

doo'-nam-is

From G1410; force (literally or figuratively); specifically miraculous power (usually by implication a miracle itself):

- ability, abundance, meaning, might (-ily, -y, -y deed),
(worker of) miracle (-s), power, strength, violence,
mighty (wonderful) work.

We need this power to fulfil our assignment to heal the sick, cleanse the lepers and raise the dead.

And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. ⁸ Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give. Matthew 10:7-8 KJV

We also need this power to overcome the enemy.

Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. Luke 10:19 KJV

When we receive His Dunamis Power, it is active within our human bodies.

And if the Spirit of Him Who raised up Jesus from the dead dwells in you, [then] He Who raised up Christ Jesus from the dead will also restore to life your mortal (short-lived, perishable) bodies through His Spirit Who dwells in you.
Romans 8:11 AMPC

This power enables our mortal, short-lived, perishable bodies to be restored. We need resurrection power to heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, and overcome the enemy! We need this Dunamis Power to take authority over the enemy. Without it, we cannot exercise authority, as the sons of the chief of the priests discovered.

And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. ¹⁵ And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? ¹⁶ And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. Acts 19:14-16 KJV

We need Dunamis Power to stand and hold our ground against the enemy. I am convinced that many believers suffer because they have never received the baptism in the Holy Ghost by Yashuah.

So, how would we know if we have indeed received the baptism of Yashuah? When we speak in tongues, and when the sick are healed when we lay hands on them!

He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. ¹⁷ *And these signs shall follow them that believe; **In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;*** ¹⁸ ***They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.***

Mark 16:16-18 KJV

This baptism by Jesus is so important that it is recorded in all four Gospels.

*I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: **he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.*** Matthew 3:11 KJV

I indeed have baptized you in water, but he shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit. Mark 1:8 KJV

John answered all, saying, I indeed baptize you with water, but He who is mightier than I comes, the thong of whose sandals I am not worthy to loose. He shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire. Luke 3:16 MKJV

And I did not know Him, but He who sent me to baptize with water, that One said to me, Upon whom you shall see the Spirit descending, and remaining upon Him, He is the One who baptizes with the Holy Spirit. John 1:33 MKJV

IN ONE ACCORD

On the day of Pentecost, all were in one accord.

And in the fulfilling of the day of Pentecost, they were all with one accord in one place. Acts 2:1 MKJV

God promised in the Old Testament that He would return a pure language to the people.

For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent. Zephaniah 3:9 KJV

Then I will give to the peoples [clear and pure speech from] purified lips [which reflect their purified hearts], That all of them may call on the name of the Lord, To serve Him shoulder to shoulder (united). Zephaniah 3:9 AMP

*For at that time I will change the speech of the peoples to a pure speech, that all of them may call upon the name of the Lord and serve him with **one accord**.* Zephaniah 3:9 ESV

God changes the speech of the people to a pure speech, and they will SERVE HIM with **ONE ACCORD**!

The Lord is faithful! When He ascended to heaven, He promised the outpouring of the Holy Spirit. When the day of Pentecost came, they were all with **one accord** in one place. In Acts 2:1, the Lord says when He comes back, He will restore a pure language for His people. This means He will give back one language without any profanity.

Submit your spiritual tongue to the Lord every day!

THE HOLY SPIRIT

Jesus's promise of the Holy Ghost was fulfilled on the day of Pentecost, 50 days after His resurrection. While they were all in one accord, a sound from heaven came like a mighty wind and filled the whole house. Tongues of fire came upon each individual and filled them with the Holy Spirit. They all spoke in their own languages. The baptism in the Holy Ghost came from above and immersed them. Streams of living water came out of their innermost beings and out of their hearts. Their mouths uttered spiritual words as the Spirit spoke to their spirit.

Anyone who believes in me may come and drink! For the Scriptures declare, 'Rivers of living water will flow from his heart. John 7:38 NLT

For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks.
Matthew 12:34 KJV

We cannot hold back when the Holy Ghost immerses us! The heart and the mouth will overflow! This is where God and man must co-operate. Adonai will immerse and fill us, but we must do the speaking.

QUENCHING THE SPIRIT

Do not quench the Spirit when He deposits a word into your heart. Do not withhold when He gives you a prophecy or any command to fulfil. We sometimes bottle up the words that are within us. We quench what the Holy Spirit deposits into us and do not give free expression to our spiritual emotions. Don't hold back! Let the Holy Spirit utter what He wants to minister to the Body of Christ through your inner most belly.

THE SEAL

Yashuah immerses us in the Holy Ghost. He deposits into us and then seals us with the Holy Spirit.

And He has sealed us and having given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. 2 Corinthians 1:22 MKJV

He is given to us like an engagement ring, as the first installment of what's coming! He is our hope-promise of a future inheritance which seals us until we have all of redemption's promises and experience complete freedom—all for the supreme glory and honor of God! Ephesians 1:14 TPT

Paul uses the imagery of a marriage to explain this seal. It is like the engagement ring a bridegroom gives his fiancée to indicate that he plans to marry her. The engagement ring seals the commitment until the marriage ceremony and supper take place.

Paul ends this verse by stating there is a promise to experience total and complete freedom. The moment we believe in our hearts and confess with our mouths, Yashuah is our Lord and Saviour, we are sealed with the Holy Ghost. Complete freedom comes with soul salvation!

Through our faith, the mighty power of God constantly guards us until our full salvation is ready to be revealed in the last time. 1 Peter 1:5 TPT

For you are reaping the harvest of your faith—the full salvation promised you—your souls' victory!
1 Peter 1:9 TPT

The KJV says, "*obtaining the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls.*"

Here we find Adonai's promise that we belong to Him. He bought us out of slavery and put His seal on us, never to be sold as slaves again. This down payment also confirms He will return with His reward to pay the rest, as the parable of the good Samaritan indicates. The innkeeper (host) was paid two denarii to take care of the wounded man with a promise that the Samaritan would return to repay the innkeeper for any other expenses incurred (Luke 10:35). Also, this down payment sets us apart for His special use.

*And so those whom God **set apart, he called; and those he called, he put right with himself, and he shared his glory with them.** Romans 8:30 GNT*

This seal is something audible, visible, and public and it cannot be kept a secret. It begins when we receive our language.

*And these signs shall follow them that believe; **In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; ¹⁸ They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.** Mark 16:17-18 KJV*

**This is the seal the apostles and other believers received.
No other seal is needed.**

The apostles waited in the upper room for the Holy Ghost as they had not yet received the seal. The moment they received the Holy Ghost, they started to speak in tongues and were rewarded for waiting.

Afterwards, Peter, a Jew, was sent by the Holy Spirit to the house of Cornelius, a Gentile. It was forbidden for a Jew to enter the house of a Gentile.

Peter thought he would share the Gospel with them and afterwards baptise them in water, but while he was still speaking, the Holy Ghost fell on the household of Cornelius. Peter and all who came with him were astonished that the Holy Spirit fell even before water baptism took place.

*While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all those hearing the Word. ⁴⁵ And those of the circumcision, who believed (as many as came with Peter), were astonished because the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out on the nations also. ⁴⁶ For they heard them speak with tongues and magnify God. Then Peter answered, ⁴⁷ **Can anyone forbid water that these, who have received the Holy Ghost as well as we, should not be baptized?** Acts 10:44-47 MKJV*

When they, too, received the seal, Peter realised their water baptism could not be forbidden. This reveals another Biblical truth, namely that bearing fruit is not a prerequisite for baptism. It is not a requirement for any believer to be baptised by Jesus in the Holy Ghost into Dunamis Power, nor by a believer in water into righteousness.

We can conclude that there are two ways to administer the baptism of the Holy Ghost.

- It can fall on people directly from heaven.
- It can be received by the laying on of hands by believers.

In Acts 8, Philip preached the gospel, and believers were baptised in water. John and Peter were sent to Samaria to lay hands on the converts

to receive the Holy Spirit (Acts 8:15). In Acts 9, Ananias laid hands on Saul to receive his sight and the Holy Ghost (Acts 9:17). In Acts 19, Paul found disciples who were already baptised by John's baptism. They were disciples of John, and not yet baptised into Jesus Christ. We should not merely be disciples of ministries or churches. We need to be disciples of Jesus. Paul baptised them into Jesus and laid hands on them. Then the Holy Ghost came on them and they spoke with tongues and prophesied (Acts 19:3-6).

PURPOSE

The purpose of this baptism is to receive supernatural power, also known as resurrection power, or Dunamis Power. Many believers forfeit this power because they do not receive the baptism of the Holy Ghost. The English word for Dunamis is "**dynamite**", referring to an explosive. Likewise, spiritual "dynamite" causes an explosion within the believer to be a witness for Yashuah and raise the dead, heal the sick and cleanse the lepers.

Sinners can discern the presence of the power!

The disciples demonstrated this power when they preached the gospel.

For the kingdom of God does not consist in talk but in power. 1 Corinthians 4:20 ESV

Saints, we need to go back to the basics. Paul said the only thing worth talking about was that which the Holy Spirit revealed to him.

And I will not be presumptuous to speak of anything except what Christ has accomplished through me. For many non-Jewish people are coming into faith's obedience by the

power of the Spirit of God, which is displayed through mighty signs and amazing wonders, both in word and deed. Starting from Jerusalem I went from place to place as far as the distant Roman province of Illyricum, fully preaching the wonderful message of Christ.
Romans 15:18-19 TPT

There are three main reasons we need to tend to the Gospel.

- Yashuah proclaims it.
- It has been confirmed by eyewitnesses.
- The Holy Spirit bears supernatural testimony by signs and wonders.

Warning Against Neglecting Salvation

For this reason we must pay closer attention to the things we have heard, or we may drift away, ² because if the message spoken by angels was reliable, and every violation and act of disobedience received its just punishment, ³ how will we escape if we neglect a salvation as great as this? It was first proclaimed by the Lord himself, and then it was confirmed to us by those who heard him, ⁴ while God added his testimony through signs, wonders, various miracles, and gifts of the Holy Spirit distributed according to his will. Hebrews 2:1-4 ISV

UNITY

The main reason for baptism in the Holy Spirit is to bring unity within the Body of Christ.

*For by one Spirit all of us, Jews and Greeks, slaves and free, were baptized **into one body** and were all privileged to drink from one Spirit. 1 Corinthians 12:13 ISV*

When the Holy Ghost fell on the disciples on Pentecost, they were in one accord, meaning there was unity among them. They were one in Spirit and one in body to produce unity. Today, however, many believers within the Body of Christ are out to bring division, confusion, strife, and envy.

I urge you, my brothers and sisters, for the sake of the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to agree to live in unity with one another and put to rest any division that attempts to tear you apart. Be restored as one united body living in perfect harmony. Form a consistent choreography among yourselves, having a common perspective with shared values. ¹¹ My dear brothers and sisters, I have a serious concern I need to bring up with you, for I have been informed by those of Chloe's house church that you have been destructively arguing among yourselves. ¹² And I need to bring this up because each of you is claiming loyalty to different preachers. Some are saying, "I am a disciple of Paul," or, "I follow Apollos," or, "I am a disciple of Peter the Rock," and some, "I belong only to Christ." ¹³ But let me ask you, is Christ divided up into groups? Did I die on the cross for you? At your baptism did you pledge yourselves to follow Paul? 1 Corinthians 1:10-13 TPT

Brothers and sisters, when I was with you I found it impossible to speak to you as those who are spiritually mature people, for you are still dominated by the mind-set

of the flesh. And because you are immature infants in Christ, ² I had to nurse you and feed you with "milk," not with the solid food of more advanced teachings, because you weren't ready for it. In fact, you are still not ready to be fed solid food, ³ for you are living your lives dominated by the mind-set of the flesh. Ask yourselves: Is there jealousy among you? Do you compare yourselves with others? Do you quarrel like children and end up taking sides? If so, this proves that you are living your lives centered on yourselves, dominated by the mind-set of the flesh, and behaving like unbelievers. ⁴ For when you divide yourselves up in groups—a "Paul group" and an "Apollos group"—you're acting like people without the Spirit's influence. 1 Corinthians 3:1-4 TPT

My heart is broken before the Lord because of disunity in the Body.

I don't want to find you in disunity, with jealousy and angry outbursts, with selfish ambition, slander, gossip, arrogance, and turmoil. ²¹ I'm actually afraid that on my next visit my God will humble me in front of you as I shed tears over those who keep sinning without repenting of their impurity, sexual immorality, and perversion. 2 Corinthians 12:20b-21 TPT

A PERSONAL WARNING

We should never be involved in activities that cause **division** in the Body of Christ. If you encounter any person or ministry causing confusion,

division, strife, or envy to divide the church or discredit a ministry or person – FLEE!

"Let there be no strife between us", Abraham said to his nephew, Lot, when they decided to split up.

Then Abram said unto Lot, Let there be no strife, I pray thee, between me and thee and between my pastors and thine, for we are brethren. Genesis 13:8 JUB

Abraham knew what envy and strife would do, just as I teach the Body of Christ that strife opens the door for "every evil work" (James 3:16 KJV). I do not tolerate this in my own life.

The Lord sometimes separates people strategically and scatters them into the nations as labourers in the field for the end-time harvest (1 Peter 1:1 TPT). Let us labour in HIS field without strife, division, and confusion. When He breaks people loose from a group or a ministry, let us release and bless one another with love to be harvesters for the Lord. For in the fullness of time, when the Gentiles have come in the Nations of Israel will be saved.

For I do not want you, brothers and sisters, to be ignorant of this mystery—lest you be wise in your own eyes—that a partial hardening has come upon Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. Romans 11:25 TLV

Paul and Barnabas are an example. Since Paul's conversion, they had been ministering together, and at a certain point, there was a huge disagreement between them.

Disagreement between Paul and Barnabas

After some days, Paul said to Barnabas, "Let's travel to the regions where we've preached the word of God and see how the believers are getting along." ³⁷ Barnabas wished to take Mark (also known as John) along with them, ³⁸ but Paul disagreed. He didn't think it was proper to take the one who had deserted them in south-central Turkey, leaving them to do their missionary work without him. ³⁹

It became a heated argument between them, a disagreement so sharp that they parted from each other. Barnabas took Mark and sailed to Cyprus. ⁴⁰ And Paul chose Silas as his partner. After the believers prayed for them, asking for the Lord's favor on their ministry, they left ⁴¹ for Syria and southeast Turkey. Every place they went, they left the church stronger and more encouraged than before. Acts 15:36-41 TPT

Until then, Paul and Barnabas had been operating like two focused and goal-oriented cart horses. Then a sharp disagreement took place so that they split from one another (Acts 15:39). To fully understand what had happened, we must look at the result. Peter understood something when he wrote that we would be scattered into the nations as labourers in the field.

- **Paul and Barnabas did not take the problem personally. They did not allow their disagreement to alienate them as friends and brothers.**
- **They aimed for an effective solution to their disagreement.** The solution was **separation**. Going on two

separate missions solved the problem and the problem did not continue to fester.

- **Neither Paul nor Barnabas appears to have acted out of self-interest or self-will.**
- **Neither desired to make their disagreement a Biblical issue in which one was "right", and the other was "wrong".**
- **Both seemed to be acting under their own spiritual gifts and calling.**
- **The separation was a cooperative action, not a competitive one.**
- **Time bore witness that both acted in a way that was beneficial to themselves, to Mark, to each other, and to the Gospel.**
- **It appears that Silas was then a better partner in ministry to Paul.**

One of Barnabas' strongest gifts was encouragement (Acts 4:36). Barnabas first came alongside Paul when Paul was a newly born believer and none of the apostles would associate with him because they feared him. Barnabas took Paul with him to Antioch where they ministered for a year (Acts 11:25-26). As of Acts 13:9 and following, the need for Barnabas as Paul's companion seemed to be diminishing. In chapter 15, Mark needed Barnabas' gift of encouragement much more than Paul did. This strong difference of opinion and approach was the one means by which God could separate the two "inseparable" friends, brothers, and

servants. The separation from Barnabas paved the way for the selection of Silas as a new partner (and others, like Timothy and Luke).

I am convinced that, for the second missionary journey, Silas was a more suitable partner than Barnabas. Silas, like Paul, was a Roman citizen (or at least appeared to be). It would have been difficult for Paul to protest against his unfair treatment as a Roman citizen in Philippi with Barnabas not being a Roman citizen as well (Acts 16:37). Paul and Silas' reading of the decree of the Jerusalem Council had more impact than it would have had should Paul and Barnabas have read it. God orchestrated a change of team members in a most **unusual but effective way**.

A prominent theme in the Book of Acts is **UNITY AMID DIVERSITY**. **When God reorganises team members for different missions, we should be mature enough to operate in UNITY amid DIVERSITY. We should focus on the goal, which is gathering the end-time harvest.**

While still dwelling in the Outer Courts, some of our actions are being tolerated by the Lord but when we have been transformed into the Holy of Holies those same actions are not acceptable any longer. Let Adonai be the judge!

If we cannot demonstrate the message we bring to the world, the message does not yet belong to us, and we have no authority to continue delivering it. Be an example of the message you preach!

They promise them freedom while they themselves are slaves of destructive habits — for a person is a slave of anything that has conquered him.

2 Peter 2:19 GNB

Drop everything else and listen to His voice, my dearest friend, for this is what Elohim is saying to you:

Today, when I speak, don't even think about turning a deaf ear to me like they did when they tested Me at Meribah and Massah, the place where they argued with Me, their Creator... Psalm 95:8 TPT

...for 40 long years I was grieved and disgusted by them. I described them as wicked wanderers... Psalm 95:10 TPT

They were wandering from one land to another and from one kingdom to another. Psalm 105:13 TPT

Paul boasted about the converts in Thessalonica because they wholeheartedly accepted the message he brought them.

This is why we continually thank God for your lives, because you received our message wholeheartedly.
1 Thessalonians 2:13 TPT

Yes, you are our glorious pride and joy!
1 Thessalonians 2:20 TPT.

In contrast, Paul wrote to the Galatians:

I fear for you, that perhaps I have labored over you in vain. Galatians 4:11 NASB

My question today is also:

"Was my own hard work for you, dear Believer, in vain?"

"HAVE I LABORED OVER YOU IN VAIN?"

The Lord deals with us in love. He releases mercy upon mercy, grace upon grace, but we often continue stubbornly with anger outbursts, constant conflict and strife, inappropriate language, etc. The time might come when He will give us only one more chance! Do not waste His mercy!

Let us learn a lesson from Israel, which wandered to and fro in the desert for 40 years. Their bodies were scattered in the wilderness because of their rebellion and stubborn spirit. There might come a day in our own lives when Adonai will make a vow.

So for 40 years I was disgusted and grieved by them. I described them as wicked wanderers whose hearts would not follow my ways or keep my words. ¹¹ So, I made a vow in my anger and declared, They will never enter the resting place I've planned for them!
Psalm 95:10-11 TPT

Let us never be as hard-hearted and stubborn as they were.

*Stay away from all the foolish arguments of the immature, for these disputes will only generate more conflict. ²⁴ For a true servant of our Lord Jesus will not be argumentative but gentle toward all and skilled in helping others see the truth, having great patience toward the immature. ²⁵ Then with meekness you'll be able to carefully enlighten those who argue with you so they can **see God's gracious gift of repentance and be brought to the truth.** ²⁶ This will cause them to rediscover themselves and escape from the snare of Satan who caught them in his trap so that they would carry out his purposes. 2 Timothy 2:23-26 TPT*

*Remember what you were taught from your childhood from the holy scrolls which can impart to you wisdom to experience everlasting life through the faith of Jesus, the Anointed One! ¹⁶ God has transmitted his very substance into every scripture, **for it is God-breathed. It will empower you by its instruction and correction, giving you the strength to take the right direction and lead you deeper into the path of godliness. ¹⁷ Then you will be God's servant, fully mature and perfectly prepared to fulfill any assignment God gives you.** 2 Timothy 3:15-17 TPT*

I give you this instruction in love and with boldness, for the truth will set you free!

Aspire to lead a calm and peaceful life as you mind your own business and earn your living, just as we've taught you. ¹² By doing this you will live an honorable life, influencing others and commanding respect of even the unbelievers. Then you'll be in need of nothing and not dependent upon others.

1 Thessalonians 4:11-12 TPT

Requirements for Baptism

There are seven requirements for baptism in the Holy Spirit.

- Repentance.
- Baptism in water should precede this baptism.
- Be thirsty for the Spirit.

- Come to Jesus to receive the Spirit.
- Ask Him for it.
- Receive it in faith.
- Yield your tongue to utter your new language.

The Book of Acts is not a historical book but a book of patterns. Read the following scriptures and ask the Holy Spirit to lead you in the Biblical truths of baptism in the Holy Ghost.

- Acts 2:2
- Acts 8:14-17
- Acts 9:17-19
- Acts 10:44-45
- Acts 19:5-6

The Essence of the Holy Spirit Baptism

JESUS RECEIVED THE HOLY SPIRIT

*John gave further evidence, saying, I have seen the **Spirit descending as a dove out of heaven**, and it dwelt on Him [never to depart]. John 1:32 AMPC*

THE HOLY SPIRIT LED JESUS

*Then Jesus, full of and controlled by the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan and was **led in [by] the [Holy] Spirit**. Luke 4:1 AMPC*

*Then Jesus went back full of and under the **power of the [Holy] Spirit** into Galilee, and the fame of Him spread through the whole region round about. ¹⁵ And He Himself conducted [a course of] teaching in their synagogues,*

being recognized and honored and praised by all.

Luke 4:14-15 AMPC

JESUS PERFORMED MANY GREAT WORKS AFTER HE HAD RECEIVED THE HOLY SPIRIT

On the third day there was a wedding at Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there. ² Jesus also was invited with His disciples to the wedding. John 2:1-2 AMPC

*And when the manager **tasted the water** just now **turned into wine**, not knowing where it came from-- though the servants who had drawn the water knew--he called the bridegroom. John 2:9 AMPC*

This was the very first miracle Jesus performed. Many more followed.

*So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was **sick** at Capernaum. ⁴⁷ When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judaea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the **point of death**. ⁴⁸ Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see **signs and wonders, ye will not believe**. John 4:46-48 KJV*

*And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath days. ³² And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his **word was with power**. ³³ And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an **unclean devil**, and **cried out with a loud voice**, ³⁴ Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee,*

thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God. ³⁵ *And Jesus rebuked him, saying, **Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and hurt him not.*** ³⁶ *And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this! for with **authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.*** Luke 4:31-36 KJV

*Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers **diseases** brought them unto him; and he **laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.*** ⁴¹ *And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.* Luke 4:40-41 KJV

*And immediately he rose up before them, and **took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God.*** Luke 5:25 KJV

HE WHO IS MIGHTIER WILL BAPTISE YOU WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

*John answered them all by saying, **I baptize you with water;** but He Who is mightier than I is coming, the strap of Whose sandals I am not fit to unfasten. He will **baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire.*** Luke 3:16 AMPC

- After being born again and baptised in water, we should receive the power of the Holy Spirit!

- God doesn't want us to live for Him in our own strength. He wants to live through us by the supernatural power of the Holy Spirit!

*And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, **Receive ye the Holy Ghost.*** John 20:22 KJV

JESUS COMMANDED HIS DISCIPLES TO GO AND PREACH THE GOSPEL AND BAPTISE THE PEOPLE

*And He said to them, **Go into all the world and preach and publish openly the good news (the Gospel)** to every creature [of the whole human race]. ¹⁶ **He who believes** [who adheres to and trusts in and relies on the Gospel and Him Whom it sets forth] and is **baptized will be saved** [from the penalty of eternal death]; but he **who does not believe** [who does not adhere to and trust in and rely on the Gospel and Him Whom it sets forth] **will be condemned.*** Mark 16:15-16 AMPC

JESUS GAVE US AUTHORITY

*Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. ³⁴ For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and **gave authority to his servants**, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.* Mark 13:33 – 34 KJV

*For even though I boast rather freely about our **power and authority**, which the **Lord gave** for your upbuilding and not for demolishing you, yet I shall not be put to shame [for exceeding the truth].* 2 Corinthians 10:8 AMPC

THESE SIGNS WILL ACCOMPANY THEM

*And these attesting signs will accompany those who believe: in **My name they will drive out demons**; they will **speak in new languages**; ¹⁸ They will **pick up serpents**; and [even] if they **drink anything deadly**, it will **not hurt them**; they will lay their **hands on the sick**, **and they will get well**. Mark 16:17-18 AMPC*

BEFORE JESUS ASCENDED TO HEAVEN, HE INSTRUCTED HIS DISCIPLES TO WAIT ON THE HOLY SPIRIT

*And while being in their company and eating with them, **He commanded them not to leave Jerusalem** but to **wait** for what the Father had promised, Of which [He said] you have heard Me speak. [John 14:16, 26; 15:26.] ⁵ For John baptized with water, but not many days from now you shall **be baptized with (placed in, introduced into) the Holy Spirit**. Act 1:4-5 AMPC*

*And I will ask the Father, and He will give you **another Comforter** (Counselor, Helper, Intercessor, Advocate, Strengtheners, and Standby), that He may remain with you forever. John 14:16 AMPC*

*But the **Comforter** (Counselor, Helper, Intercessor, Advocate, Strengtheners, Standby), the Holy Spirit, Whom the Father will send in My name [in My place, to represent Me and act on My behalf], He will teach you all things. And He will cause you to recall (will remind you of, bring to your remembrance) everything I have told you. John 14:26 AMPC*

THE HOLY SPIRIT CAME UPON THEM!

*And when the day of **Pentecost** (50 days after Jesus' resurrection) had fully come, they were all assembled together in one place. Acts 2:1 AMPC*

*And there appeared to them **tongues resembling fire, which were separated and distributed and which settled on each one of them.** ⁴ And they were **all filled (diffused throughout their souls) with the Holy Spirit** and began to speak in other (different, foreign) languages (tongues), as the Spirit kept giving them clear and loud expression [in each tongue in appropriate words]. Acts 2:3-4 AMPC*

JESUS DEPARTED TO HEAVEN

So then the Lord Jesus, after He had spoken to them, was taken up into heaven and He sat down at the right hand of God. Mark 16:19 ESV [Ps. 110:1]

PHILIP WENT TO SAMARIA TO PREACH THE GOSPEL

Eight years later, Philip carried the Gospel to the people of Samaria. With "ONE ACCORD", they gave heed unto the words Philip spoke! Many were delivered from unclean spirits. This was the work of the power of the Holy Spirit!

Now those who were scattered abroad went about [through the land from place to place] preaching the glad tidings, the Word [the doctrine concerning the attainment through Christ of salvation in the kingdom of God].

⁵ **Philip** [the deacon, not the apostle] went down to the city of **Samaria** and proclaimed the Christ (the Messiah) to them [the people]; [Acts 6:5.] ⁶ And great crowds of people with one accord listened to and heeded what was said by Philip, as they heard him and **watched the miracles and wonders** which he kept performing [from time to time]. ⁷ **For foul spirits came out of many who were possessed by them**, screaming and shouting with a loud voice, and many who were suffering from palsy or were crippled **were restored to health**. ⁸ And there was great rejoicing in that city. Act 8:4-8 AMPC

But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.
Acts 8:12 KJV

All were baptised, but they had not yet received the Holy Spirit.

PETER AND JOHN WENT TO THE SAMARITANS SO THEY COULD RECEIVE THE HOLY SPIRIT

Peter and John heard that these people were baptised. They went to Samaria to lay hands on them so they might receive the Holy Spirit.

*Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John. ¹⁵ Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost. ¹⁶ (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: **only they were baptized in the name of the Lord***

Jesus.) ¹⁷ ***Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.*** Acts 8:14-17 KJV

This confirms that an experience follows salvation, which is called receiving the Holy Spirit, or being filled with the Holy Ghost.

THE HOLY SPIRIT FELL ON THE GENTILE HOUSEHOLD OF CORNELIUS WHILE PETER WAS STILL PREACHING TO THEM

Peter brought the Word of God to Cornelius' household ten years after Pentecost. While he was still talking, the Holy Spirit was poured out onto the Gentiles. They, too, spoke in tongues and magnified God.

While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all who were listening to the message. ⁴⁵ *And the believers from among the circumcised [the Jews] who came with Peter were surprised and amazed, because the free gift of the Holy Spirit had been bestowed and poured out largely even on the Gentiles.* ⁴⁶ *For they heard them talking in [unknown] tongues (languages) and extolling and magnifying God. Then Peter asked.*
Acts 10:44-46 AMPC

After they had received their tongues, Peter commanded them to be baptised in the Name of the Lord.

Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we? ⁴⁸ *And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.* Acts 10:47-48 KJV

PAUL LAID HANDS ON THE EPHESIANS

Twenty years after Pentecost, Paul went to Ephesus. He asked if they had received the Holy Spirit. They replied that they had never heard of the Holy Spirit!

*And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples, ² He said unto them, **Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed?** And they said unto him, **We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost.** Acts 19:1-2 KJV*

*'Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed?' he asked them. 'No,' they replied, **'we haven't even heard that there is a Holy Spirit.'** Acts 19:2 NLT*

*And he said unto them, **Unto what then were ye baptized?** And they said, Unto John's baptism. Acts 19:3 KJV*

When Paul explained that the baptism of John was only the baptism of repentance, they were all baptised again. This time in the Name of the Lord Jesus!

*Then said Paul, **John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance**, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. ⁵ When they heard this, they were **baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.** And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied. Acts 19:4-6 KJV*

While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul went through the upper inland districts and came down to Ephesus. There he found some disciples. ² And he asked them, **Did you receive the Holy Spirit** when you believed [on Jesus as the Christ]? And they said, **No, we have not even heard that there is a Holy Spirit.** ³ And he asked, Into what [baptism] then were you baptized? They said, Into John's baptism. ⁴ And Paul said, John baptized with **the baptism of repentance**, continually telling the people that they should believe in the One Who was to come after him, that is, in Jesus [having a conviction full of joyful trust that He is Christ, the Messiah, and being obedient to Him]. ⁵ **On hearing this they were baptized [again, this time] in the name of the Lord Jesus.** ⁶ And as Paul laid his hands upon them, **the Holy Spirit came on them; and they spoke in [foreign, unknown] tongues (languages) and prophesied.** Acts 19:1-6 AMPC

THE HOLY SPIRIT GIVES A NEW LANGUAGE

And they were all filled (diffused throughout their souls) with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other (different, foreign) languages (tongues), as the Spirit kept giving them clear and loud expression [in each tongue in appropriate words]. Acts 2:4 AMPC

- Salvation saves us. Baptism with the Holy Spirit empowers us!
- We receive the Language of the Spirit!

PAUL SPOKE IN TONGUES

Now I wish that you might all speak in [unknown] tongues, but more especially [I want you] to **prophecy** (to be inspired to preach and interpret the divine will and purpose). He who prophesies [who is inspired to preach and teach] is greater (more useful and more important) than he who speaks in [unknown] tongues, unless he should interpret [what he says], so that the church may be edified and receive good [from it]. 1 Corinthians 14:5 KJV

THE POWER SOURCE

The Holy Spirit is the Power Source. When we reject Him, we will not experience miracles, healings, demons cast out, or speaking in tongues!

- Accept Him by receiving the baptism in the Holy Spirit. Receive God's supernatural power which works in various wonderful ways. Receive the Source to have His Power!
- **This is essential and not optional!**
- Power is released when speaking in tongues.
- This is how we will receive revelations and tap into the Holy Spirit who lives inside of us to renew our minds.

MORE ON PRAYING IN TONGUES

THE TOWER OF BABEL

*And the **whole earth was of one language**, and of one speech. Genesis 11:1 KJV*

*And they said, Go to, **let us build us a city and a tower**, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. ⁵ And the **LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded.** ⁶ And the LORD said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and **now nothing will be restrained from them**, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down, and there **confound their language**, that they may not understand one another's speech. Genesis 11:4-7 KJV*

On the day of Pentecost, they were all with "one accord". God Almighty prophesied in Zephaniah that He would change the speech of the people to a pure speech, and they would serve Him in one accord.

*And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with **one accord** in one place. Acts 2:1 KJV*

*For at that time I will change the speech of the peoples to a pure speech, that all of them may call upon the name of the Lord and serve him with **one accord**. Zephaniah 3:9 ESV*

PRIVATE AND SECRET LANGUAGES SPOKEN TO GOD

*For one who speaks in an [unknown] tongue **speaks not to men but to God**, for no one understands or catches his meaning, because in the [Holy] Spirit he utters secret truths and hidden things [not obvious to the understanding]. 1 Corinthians 14:2 AMPC*

PRAYING AND SINGING IN THE SPIRIT LEAVES HUMAN UNDERSTANDING UNFRUITFUL

*For if I pray in an unknown tongue, **my spirit prayeth**, but my **understanding is unfruitful**. ¹⁵ What is it then? I will **pray with the spirit**, and I will **pray with the understanding also**: I will **sing with the spirit**, and I will **sing with the understanding also**. 1 Corinthians 14:14-15 KJV*

BUILDING YOURSELF UP

But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost. Jude 1:20 KJV

PRAYING IN TONGUES IS PART OF THE BELIEVER'S ARMOUR

*With all prayer and petition pray [with specific requests] **at all times** [on every occasion and in every season] **in the Spirit**, and with this in view, stay alert with all perseverance and petition [interceding in prayer] for all God's people. Ephesians 6:18 AMP*

Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints. Ephesians 6:18 KJV

Therefore, my brothers, desire the ability to prophesy, and do not prevent others from speaking in other languages.
1 Corinthians 14:39 ISV

Circumcision of the Heart

From the beginning, Adonai has been requiring not only circumcision of the flesh but circumcision of the heart. But what does heart circumcision have to do with baptisms? I have discovered that these seven baptisms have everything to do with heart circumcision, a principle ordained by Adonai.

Therefore, circumcise the foreskin of your heart, and be no longer stiff-necked. Deuteronomy 10:16 MKJV

And Jehovah your God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your seed, to love Jehovah your God with all your heart and with all your soul, so that you may live.
Deuteronomy 30:6 MKJV

Circumcise yourselves to Jehovah, and take away the foreskins of your heart, men of Judah and people of Jerusalem; lest My fury come forth like fire, and burn so that none can put it out; because of the evil of your doings.
Jeremiah 4:4 MKJV

Circumcision of the foreskin was required in the Old Testament to be a token of the covenant between Adonai and His people.

And you shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin. And it shall be a token of the covenant between Me and you.

Genesis 17:11 MKJV

When a believer goes through all these baptisms, heart circumcision takes place, and we are sealed by the Blood of the Lamb as a token of the covenant between Adonai and the newborn believer.

And He gave him the covenant of circumcision. And so Abraham fathered Isaac and circumcised him the eighth day. And Isaac fathered Jacob, and Jacob the twelve patriarchs. Acts 7:8 MKJV

And those of the circumcision, who believed (as many as came with Peter), were astonished because the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out on the nations also.

Acts 10:45 MKJV

Furthermore, Paul wrote that circumcision of the flesh only profits if you keep the law. In this current dispensation of grace, we as Gentiles are not functioning under the Mosaic Law anymore as God has now engraved His laws in our hearts.

For circumcision truly profits if you keep the Law, but if you are a transgressor of the Law, circumcision becomes uncircumcision. Romans 2:25 MKJV

This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them. Hebrews 10:16 MKJV

This can only happen once heart circumcision takes place.

So, what brings us into Adonai's covenant? Not being a Jew or circumcision of the flesh, but circumcision of the heart in spirit and not in letter.

For he is not a Jew who is one outwardly, nor is circumcision that outwardly in flesh; ²⁹ but he is a Jew who is one inwardly, and circumcision is of the heart; in spirit and not in letter; whose praise is not from men, but from God. Romans 2:28 MKJV

*And he (speaking of Abraham) received a sign of circumcision, a **seal of the righteousness** of the faith while still uncircumcised; so that he might be the father of all those believing through uncircumcision, for righteousness to be imputed to them also; ¹² and a father of circumcision to those not of the circumcision only, but also to those walking by the steps of the faith of our father Abraham during uncircumcision. Romans 4:11-12 MKJV*

Abraham received his righteousness (right standing before God) even before his outward circumcision in the flesh, so he could even be the father of the uncircumcised (Gentiles). We as Gentiles now receive our circumcision of the heart by faith in Christ Jesus.

INHERITING GOD'S KINGDOM

Many born-again believers are still enslaved by evil practices. Those still engaging in these evil practices will not inherit the Kingdom of God.

Surely you must know that people who practice evil cannot possess God's kingdom realm. Stop being deceived! People

*who continue to engage in sexual immorality, idolatry, adultery, sexual perversion, homosexuality¹⁰ fraud, greed, drunkenness, verbal abuse, or extortion—these **will not inherit God's kingdom realm**¹¹ It's true that some of you once lived in those lifestyles, but now you have been purified from sin, made holy, and given a perfect standing before God—all because of the power of the name of the Lord Jesus, the Messiah, and through our union with the Spirit of our God.¹² It's true that our freedom allows us to do anything, but that doesn't mean that everything we do is good for us. I'm free to do as I choose, but I choose to never be enslaved to anything¹³ Some have said, "I eat to live and I live to eat!" But God will do away with it all. The body was not created for illicit sex, but to serve and worship our Lord Jesus, who can fill the body with himself.*

1 Corinthians 6:9-13 TPT

Paul emphasises in verse 11 that "*some of you once lived*". Per implication, it means there are still believers who live this evil of lifestyle. Those who walked away from such a lifestyle are now purified from sin and made holy.

Saints, few understand the believer's journey unto full salvation. ("*The Apocalypse of our Full Salvation*" is available for free on our website. It explains this full salvation, as written by Peter in his first epistle.) The beginning of faith is the salvation of your spirit, but Peter mentions in 1 Peter 1:9 (TPT) that we are reaping the harvest of our faith - the full salvation of our souls!

Baptism of Fire

Sanctification and purification are not the same. Sanctification means to be set apart, to be holy and whole for a special use in the Kingdom of God. Then, purification in the soul realm follows to get rid of all the filthiness in our lives, as Paul explained in 1 Corinthians 6. I find it very interesting that fire is connected to the functions of a two-edged sword in the Bible.

*For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any **twoedged sword**, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

Hebrews 4:12 KJV

Likewise, “**fire**” also purifies. But in the case of a reprobated heart (*an unconverted heart*) it destroys. A few examples are available in the Bible, such as the following.

Notwithstanding many warnings, the people of Sodom and Gomorrah continued with their immoral lifestyle, and brimstone and fire destroyed them all (Genesis 19:24).

When Moses stretched forth his rod, Jehovah sent thunder and hail upon the land of Egypt because of their unrighteous deeds (Exodus 9:23). Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, each took his censer and put fire in it, and put incense on it, and offered **strange fire** before Jehovah (Leviticus 10:1). Fire went out from Jehovah and devoured them, and they died before Him (Leviticus 10:2).

Adonai will not tolerate idolatry! As New Testament believers, we are ignorant of modern idol worship and think we can get away with it. But

the day is approaching very soon when Adonai will announce who His sons and daughters are. Those who played with strange fire (idol worship) will mourn as there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

*In the seventeenth year of Pekah the son of Remaliah Ahaz the son of Jotham king of Judah began to reign. ³ But he walked in the way of the kings of Israel. Yes, and he made his son to **pass through the fire**, according to the abominations of the nations whom Jehovah cast out from before the sons of Israel. 2 Kings 16:1, 3 MKJV*

And they caused their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire. And they used divination and incantations, and sold themselves to do evil in the sight of Jehovah, to provoke Him to anger. 2 Kings 17:17 MKJV

Offering children to the King of Molech was a pagan ritual. Disturbingly, these deeds are still in practice today. When children are sacrificed to religion, homosexuality surfaces on the horizon in the bloodline. Passing our children through strange fire is the harvest of this pagan ritual. It is an abomination of desolation before Yehôvâh Elohim.

With this background, it now makes sense that Abraham did not hesitate to offer his only begotten son, Isaac, as this ritual was in the order of the day. The difference was that Abraham believed God would raise his son from the dead because of the promise and covenant made with him by Jehovah. In Isaac, God promised He would establish His everlasting Covenant with Abraham.

And Abraham took the wood of the burnt offering and laid it on Isaac his son. And he took the fire in his hand, and a knife. And they both went together. ⁷ And Isaac spoke to

Abraham his father and said, My father. And he said, Here am I, my son. And he said, Behold the fire and the wood. But where is the lamb for a burnt offering?
Genesis 22:6- 7 MKJV

A flame of **fire** in the burning bush prepared the meeting place between Moses and Jehovah as holy ground (Exodus 3:2). At that burning bush, God communicated with Moses and declared his destiny. Not only did God use the **fire** of the burning bush to communicate with Moses, but it was also a pillar of **fire** that gave light to His people and led the way to the promised land.

And Jehovah went before them by day in a pillar of a cloud, to lead them the right away, and by night in a pillar of fire, to give them light, to go by day and night. ²² He did not take away the pillar of the cloud by day, nor the pillar of fire by night, from before the people.
Exodus 13:21-22 MKJV

Jehovah came down in **fire** on Mount Sinai. He is indeed a consuming and devouring fire!

And Mount Sinai was smoking, all of it, because Jehovah came down upon it in fire. And the smoke of it went up like the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mountain quaked greatly. Exodus 19:18 MKJV

*And the sight of the glory of Jehovah was like **devouring fire** on the top of the mountain in the eyes of the sons of Israel.* Exodus 24:17 MKJV

*For Jehovah your God is a **consuming fire**, a jealous God.*
Deuteronomy 4:24 MKJV

Our God is a consuming fire. Hebrews 12:29 MKJV

*And the **fire of Jehovah** fell and burned up the burnt sacrifice and the wood, and the stones and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench.*

1 Kings 18:38 MKJV

Elijah understood this **fire**. He called upon it and three times it devoured fifty men who approached him on the Mount.

*And Elijah answered and said to the commander of fifty, If I am a man of God, then let **fire come down from the heavens** and burn up you and your fifty. And there came down fire from the heavens and burned up him and his fifty.* 2 Kings 1:10 MKJV

God's **fire** is also for our **protection**. It devours all the filthiness in us, but the voice of Jehovah goes through flames of fire for our correction (Psalm 29:7). He makes His angels spirits and His ministers flaming **fires** (Psalm 104:4).

And of the angels He says, 'Who makes His angels spirits and His ministers a flame of fire.' Hebrews 1:7 MKJV

But who can endure the day of His coming? And who shall stand when He appears? For He is like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's soap. Malachi 3:2 MKJV

For behold, the day is coming, burning like a fire pot; and all the proud, and every doer of wickedness, shall be chaff. And the coming day will set them ablaze, says Jehovah of Hosts, which will not leave root or branches to them. Malachi 4:1 MKJV

When the burning **fire** comes over the proud and haughty, the chaff will be burned away. It will be a joyful day when the sun of righteousness arises!

But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.

Malachi 4:2 KJV

The primary aim of the “baptism with fire” is to be **set free** from all bondages and enslavements! I hope you capture this divine Biblical truth so you can come free, my dear Friend! Glory to God!

Yashuah warns that His axe is laid to the root of the tree. When there is no fruit, the tree will be cut down and cast into the fire, as John the Baptist declared.

*And now also, the axe is laid to the root of the trees. Therefore every tree which does not bring forth good fruit is cut down and cast into the fire. ¹¹ I indeed baptize you with water to repentance. But He who comes after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. **He shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire;** ¹² whose fan is in His hand, and He will cleanse His floor and gather His wheat into the storehouse; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.*

Matthew 3:10-12 MKJV

The winnowing fan (a tool that separates the chaff from the grain) is already in His hand to cleanse us. He brings in the harvest but burns the chaff with unquenchable fire.

Every tree that does not bring forth good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. Matthews 7:19 MKJV

Each one's work shall be revealed in the last days and even our faith will be tested and proven by **fire**.

*For the Day shall declare it, because it shall be **revealed by fire**; and the fire shall try each one's work as to what kind it is. 1 Corinthians 3:13b MKJV*

*So that the trial of your faith (being much more precious than that of gold that perishes, **but being proven through fire**) might be found to praise and honor and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ. 1 Peter 1:7 MKJV*

The Fire of the Lord is our Dunamis Power

Yashuah confirmed to His disciples it would be for their own good that He departed and returned to His Father's home. He then asked the Father to send the Holy Spirit to abide with them and with us. The Holy Spirit is our Helper who will teach us all things! Glory to God!

And now I will send the Holy Spirit, just as my Father promised. But stay here in the city until the Holy Spirit comes and fills you with power from heaven. Luke 24:49 NLT

But the Helper, the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and remind you of all that I said to you. John 14:26 NASB

In Strong's, the word "**power**", as in Luke 24:49, is Dunamis, which is the resurrection power that is in us (Romans 8:11; Ephesians 1:19-21). When 120 men waited in the Upper Room in Jerusalem for the Holy Ghost, as Yashuah had promised, "*they saw **tongues like flames of fire that separated, and one rested on each of them***" (Acts 2:3 ISV). It was those tongues like **FIRE** that separated them from the rest. They each received their unique tongue and Dunamis Power to preach the Gospel, raise the dead, heal the sick and cleanse the lepers. My dear Friend, we, too, need the baptism of **FIRE** to receive that same resurrection power so we can be ready for our own ministry and assignment.

To conclude this section about baptism with fire, let us reflect on John's vision of the resurrected Messiah who announced about Himself, "*I was dead, but look—I am alive forever and ever! Moreover, I hold the keys of death and Sheol*" (Revelation 1:18 TLV).

His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow.

*And **His eyes were like a flame of fire...***

Revelation 1:14 MKJV

*And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write: The Son of God, He who has **His eyes like a flame of fire** and His feet like burnished metal, says these things.*

Revelation 2:18 MKJV

And His eyes were like a flame of fire, and on His head many crowns. And He had a name written, one that no one knew except Himself. Revelation 19:12 MKJV

I believe these "*eyes like a flame of fire*" are also the two-edged sword which penetrates and divides the soul and the spirit, the thoughts, and the attitudes of the heart, to purify us with the baptism of FIRE.

Adonai's two-edged sword "*penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints, and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart*" (Hebrews 4:12 NIV).

Victory

How marvellous that this **fire** leads us to the sea of glass mingled with fire and brings us into victory while singing the Victor's song of Moses!

And I saw as it were a sea of glass, mingled with fire. And those who had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.
³ *And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvelous are Your works, Lord God Almighty, just and true are Your ways, O King of saints.* Revelation 15:2-3 MKJV

For us to stand on the sea of glass mingled with FIRE and be victorious over the beast, his image, his mark and his name, the baptism of fire does the following:

- It sanctifies.
- It purifies.
- It protects.
- It guides and leads.

GLORY TO GOD FOR HIS ALL-CONSUMING FIRE!

The Shulamite Bride

The conversation between the Bridegroom and the Bride begins with the phrase "**LET HIM**". When we study Song of Songs in the Passion Translation, we discover we indeed need to "let go" and "LET HIM" do all the work.

To enter the doorway of Jesus' heart, we must begin by saying, "Let Him". We bring Him a yielded heart and then "let Him" do the rest. God's loving grace means He will be enough for us. We can "let Him" be everything to us. We enter not by doing but by yielding.

*Then may your awakening breath
blow upon my life until I am fully yours.
Breathe upon me with your Spirit wind.
Stir up the sweet spice of your life within me.
Spare nothing as you make me your fruitful garden.
Hold nothing back until I release your fragrance.
Come walk with me as you walked
with Adam in your paradise garden.
Come taste the fruits of your life in me.*

Songs 4:16–5:1 TPT

"Spare nothing as you make me your fruitful garden" is nothing but the baptism of **fire**. Through this painful process, Adonai spares nothing so

that only purity, holiness, and His fragrance from His garden of delight will come through. He does it for us so we can stand on the sea of glass in victory over the beast, his image, his name, and his mark.

The scene of a garden and the "*breath of the Spirit wind*" point us back to Eden. Now the paradise is found in His Bride (Jeremiah 31:12 and John 15:1-2).

*For it was always in his perfect plan to adopt us as his delightful children, through our union with Jesus, the Anointed One, so that his tremendous love that cascades over us would glorify his grace—for the same love he has for the Beloved, Jesus, he has for us. And this unfolding plan brings him great pleasure! ⁷ Since we are now joined to Christ, we have been given the treasures of redemption by his blood—the total cancellation of our sins—all because of the cascading riches of his grace: ⁸ This super abundant grace is already powerfully working in us releasing all forms of wisdom and practical understanding: ⁹ And through the revelation of the Anointed One, **he unveiled his secret desires to us—the hidden mystery of his long-range plan, which he was delighted to implement from the very beginning of time** ¹⁰ And because of God's unfailing purpose, this detailed plan will reign supreme through every period of time **until the fulfillment of all the ages finally reaches its climax—when God makes all things new in all of heaven and earth through Jesus Christ.** Ephesians 1:5-10 TPT*

Adonai is transforming everything back to its original state in the Garden as before the fall. We must sit back and "**LET HIM**" do the work.

Don't turn a deaf ear to the Bridegroom when He is doing His work inside of you!

Promise me that you will not disturb my love until you are ready to arise. Songs 2:7 TPT

Baptism of Suffering

Let me tell you a mystery! Our suffering for Christ has a major purpose! It is part of the one package deal for the believer. It is part of our full restoration. This suffering is not because of living a life of unrighteousness but willingly, because of our love for Him.

But what is the exact purpose of the baptism of suffering? Let us look at some scriptures to help us conclude. Paul is one example of a believer who suffered for Christ. I believe he had all the authority to lead the New Testament believers into this concept.

*We are bound to thank God always for you, my brothers, as it is right, because your faith grows exceedingly, and the love of each one of you abounds toward one another; ⁴ so much so that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God, **for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations which you endure.** ⁵ For this is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that you **may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God for which you also suffer.***

2 Thessalonians 1:3-5 MKJV

Paul gave us a hint of the purpose of our suffering – to be counted worthy as part of the Kingdom! Many believe, when we give our hearts

to Jesus and confess with our mouths, we have arrived and will go to heaven. But, doing what Romans 10:10 says is only the beginning of the restoration plan. Being born again gives us access to enter the gates where we then dwell in the Outer Courts. Then starts the sanctification process by which we are transformed into the Holy of Holies.

This entire building is under construction and is continually growing under his supervision until it rises up completed as the holy temple of the Lord himself. ²² This means that God is transforming each one of you into the Holy of Holies, his dwelling place, through the power of the Holy Spirit living in you! Ephesians 2:21-22 TPT

After salvation, moving unto spiritual maturity and getting rid of all filthiness are still ahead of us. What encouragement is delivered to us in Corinthians!

He always comes alongside us to comfort us in every suffering so that we can come alongside those who are in any painful trial. We can bring them this same comfort that God has poured out upon us. ⁵ And just as we experience the abundance of Christ's own sufferings, even more of God's comfort will cascade upon us through our union with Christ. 2 Corinthians 1:4-5 TPT

We are comforted by Him, so we in turn can come alongside those in painful trials. Yashuah comforts us so we can get out there to help, assist and strengthen those in pain and suffering.

*If troubles weigh us down, that just means that we will receive even more comfort to pass on to you for your **deliverance!** For the comfort pouring into us empowers*

us to bring comfort to you. And with this comfort upholding you, you can endure victoriously the same suffering that we experience. ⁷ Now our hope for you is unshakable, because we know that just as you share in our sufferings you will also share in God's comforting strength.

2 Corinthians 1:6-7 TPT

Here we find the next hint from Paul, which is that suffering for Christ is to also share in His strength. It seems that our suffering in Christ brings strength to endure all kinds of trials, so we will one day stand victoriously on the sea of glass mingled with fire, singing the Victor's Song of Moses!

Brothers and sisters, you need to know about the severe trials we experienced while we were in western Turkey. All of the hardships we passed through crushed us beyond our ability to endure, and we were so completely overwhelmed that we were about to give up entirely. ⁹ It felt like we had a death sentence written upon our hearts, and we still feel it to this day. It has taught us to lose all faith in ourselves and to place all of our trust in the God who raises the dead. ¹⁰ He has rescued us from terrifying encounters with death. And now we fasten our hopes on him to continue to deliver us from death yet again, ¹¹ as you labor together with us through prayer. Because there are so many interceding for us, our deliverance will cause even more people to give thanks to God. What a gracious gift of mercy surrounds us because of your prayers! 2 Corinthians 1:8-11 TPT

Believers need to pray for one another during trials and persecutions. Many, especially those in leadership positions, are ashamed of their

trials and do not make it known, so the Body of Christ cannot intercede for them and support them. On the other hand, there are few to be trusted with the knowledge of others' shameful sufferings and trials. Many believers are more into backstabbing and gossiping than into standing alongside those who suffer and interceding for them.

Paul Boasts in His Sufferings for Christ

Are these 'super-apostles' of yours Hebrews? I am too. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they descendants of Abraham? Me too! ²³ Are they servants of the Anointed One? I'm beside myself when I speak this way, but I am much more of a servant than they. I have worked much harder for God, taken more beatings, and been dragged to more prisons than they. I've been flogged excessively, multiple times, even to the point of death. ²⁴ Five times I've received thirty-nine lashes from the Jewish leaders. ²⁵ Three times I experienced being beaten with rods. Once they stoned me. Three times I've been shipwrecked; for an entire night and a day I was adrift in the open sea. ²⁶ In my difficult travels I've faced many dangerous situations: perilous rivers, robbers, foreigners, and even my own people. I've survived deadly peril in the city, in the wilderness, with storms at sea, and with spies posing as believers. ²⁷ I've toiled to the point of exhaustion and gone through many sleepless nights. I've frequently been deprived of food and water, left hungry and shivering out in the cold, lacking proper clothing. ²⁸ And besides these painful circumstances, I have the daily pressure of my responsibility for all the churches, with a deep concern

weighing heavily on my heart for their welfare. ²⁹ I am not aloof, for who is desperate and weak and I do not feel their weakness? Who is led astray into sin and I do not burn with zeal to restore him? 2 Corinthians 11:22-29 TPT

As if his own suffering was not enough, Paul still had a deep compassion for the welfare and suffering of his fellow believers. Let this be an example for us! Rather than talking behind a fellow believer's back, let us have compassion for one another's welfare.

Our thoughts [hearts] will always be focused on what we treasure. We are so into idol worshipping that we do not see fellow believers as our highest priority in life. I believe this is the main reason members of the Body of Christ are suffering.

But keep on storing up treasures for yourselves in heaven, where moths and rust do not destroy and where thieves do not break in and steal, ²¹ because where your treasure is, there your heart will be also. Matthew 6:20-21 ISV

Compare Matthew 6:20-21 with 2 Corinthians 11. Paul's heart and thoughts were on people and the welfare of the congregation!

Once, when I was in Damascus, the governor under King Aretas had his troops searching for me to have me arrested, ³³ but I was stuffed in a basket and lowered down through a window and managed to escape. 2 Corinthians 11:32-33 TPT

We are like common clay jars that carry this glorious treasure within, so that this immeasurable power will be seen as God's, not ours. ⁸ Though we experience every kind of pressure, we're not crushed. At times we don't

know what to do, but quitting is not an option. ⁹ *We are persecuted by others, but God has not forsaken us. We may be knocked down, but not out.* ¹⁰ ***We continually share in the death of Jesus in our own bodies so that the resurrection life of Jesus will be revealed through our humanity.*** ¹¹ *We consider living to mean that we are constantly being handed over to death for Jesus' sake so that the life of Jesus will be revealed through our humanity.* ¹² *So, then, death is at work in us but it releases life in you.* 2 Corinthians 4:7-12 TPT

The baptism of suffering is to share in the death, burial, and resurrection of Christ Jesus!

When Paul shared his sufferings with the Galatians, He said no one should cause him any further trouble.

From now on, let no one cause me to suffer further, for I am carrying the very scars of our Lord Jesus in my body. Galatians 6:17 TPT

Henceforth let no man trouble me; for I bear branded on my body the marks of Jesus. Galatians 6:17 ASV

Paul addressed these false teachers who tried to bring the Gentile believers under the old Mosaic Law. They desired to avoid persecution!

*All those who insist that you be circumcised are recruiting you so they can boast in their own achievement. **They seek to avoid the persecution that comes with preaching the liberating message of the cross of Messiah!*** ¹³ *Not even those who are circumcised keep every detail of the written law. Yet they push you to be*

circumcised so that they can boast that you have become like them.¹⁴ May my only boast be found in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ. In him I have been crucified to this natural realm; and the natural realm is dead to me and no longer dominates my life¹⁵ Whether a man is circumcised or uncircumcised is meaningless to me. What really matters is the transforming power of this new creation life.¹⁶ And all those who live in agreement with this standard will have true peace and God's delight, for they are the Israel of God. Galatians 6:12-16 TPT

When believers agree with the world system, there is no persecution. Take for example the current Covid-19 situation (2020) with the pressure to wear masks and be vaccinated. Those in disagreement are facing severe pressure and persecution. They are threatened to lose the benefits of this world, e.g., buying and selling, medical aids and flying overseas to visit family.

Living by the Power of the Holy Spirit!

So now the case is closed. There remains no accusing voice of condemnation against those who are joined in life-union with Jesus, the Anointed One.² For the "law" of the Spirit of life flowing through the anointing of Jesus has liberated us from the "law" of sin and death.³ For God achieved what the law was unable to accomplish, because the law was limited by the weakness of human nature. Yet God sent us his Son in human form to identify with human weakness. Clothed with humanity, God's Son gave his body to be the sin-offering so that God could once and for all condemn the

guilt and power of sin. ⁴ So now every righteous requirement of the law can be fulfilled through the Anointed One living his life in us. And we are free to live, not according to our flesh, but by the dynamic power of the Holy Spirit! Romans 8:1-4 TPT

In fact, the mind-set focused on the flesh fights God's plan and refuses to submit to his direction, because it cannot! ⁸ For no matter how hard they try, God finds no pleasure with those who are controlled by the flesh. ⁹ But when the Spirit of Christ empowers your life, you are not dominated by the flesh but by the Spirit. And if you are not joined to the Spirit of the Anointed One, you are not of him. ¹⁰ Now Christ lives his life in you! And even though your body may be dead because of the effects of sin, his life-giving Spirit imparts life to you because you are fully accepted by God. ¹¹ Yes, God raised Jesus to life! And since God's Spirit of Resurrection lives in you, he will also raise your dying body to life by the same Spirit that breathes life into you! ¹² So then, beloved ones, the flesh has no claims on us at all, and we have no further obligation to live in obedience to it. ¹³ For when you live controlled by the flesh, you are about to die. But if the life of the Spirit puts to death the corrupt ways of the flesh, we then taste his abundant life. Romans 8:7-13 TPT

Sons and Daughters Destined for Glory

The mature children of God are those who are moved by the impulses of the Holy Spirit. ¹⁵ And you did not receive

the "spirit of religious duty," leading you back into the fear of never being good enough. But you have received the "Spirit of full acceptance," enfolding you into the family of God. And you will never feel orphaned, for as he rises up within us, our spirits join him in saying the words of tender affection, "Beloved Father!"¹⁶ For the Holy Spirit makes God's fatherhood real to us as he whispers into our innermost being, "You are God's beloved child!"¹⁷ And since we are his true children, we qualify to share all his treasures, for indeed, we are heirs of God himself. And since we are joined to Christ, we also inherit all that he is and all that he has. We will experience being co-glorified with him provided that we accept his sufferings as our own.

¹⁸ **I am convinced that any suffering we endure is less than nothing compared to the magnitude of glory that is about to be unveiled within us.** ¹⁹ **The entire universe is standing on tiptoe, yearning to see the unveiling of God's glorious sons and daughters!**

²⁰ For against its will the universe itself has had to endure the empty futility resulting from the consequences of human sin. But now, with eager expectation, ²¹ all creation longs for freedom from its slavery to decay and to experience with us the wonderful freedom coming to God's children. ²² To this day we are aware of the universal agony and groaning of creation, as if it were in the contractions of labor for childbirth. ²³ And it's not just creation. We who have already experienced the firstfruits of the Spirit also inwardly groan as we passionately long to experience our full status as God's sons and daughters—including our

physical bodies being transformed. ²⁴ For this is the hope of our salvation. Romans 8:14-24 TPT

Paul linked our sonship to suffering. The entire universe is eagerly awaiting the unveiling of Adonai's glorious sons and daughters!

*Having determined our destiny ahead of time, he called us to himself and transferred his perfect righteousness to everyone he called. And those who possess his **perfect righteousness** he co-glorified with his Son!*
Romans 8:30 TPT

Here, we find a mystery to be revealed to those seeking deeper truths. The believer's baptism is in the Name of Jesus to fulfil all righteousness. This is not the same as receiving right standing. It is a fulfilment. Fulfilment means to achieve something desired, promised or predicted. The explanation of this mystery is as follows: Those who possess HIS perfect righteousness will be His sons and daughters. Yehôvâh Elohim is busy with a work of restoration, and we are now reaping the harvest of our faith – the salvation of our souls! Glory to Adonai!

An even better understanding of the concept of righteousness can be found in the discussion on "Justification".

The Triumph of God's Love

So, what does all this mean? If God has determined to stand with us, tell me, who then could ever stand against us? ³² For God has proved his love by giving us his greatest treasure, the gift of his Son. And since God freely offered

*him up as the sacrifice for us all, he certainly won't withhold from us anything else he has to give.³³ Who then would dare to accuse those whom God has chosen in love to be his? God himself is the judge who has issued his final verdict over them — **"Not guilty!"**³⁴ Who then is left to condemn us? Certainly not Jesus, the Anointed One! For he gave his life for us, and even more than that, he has conquered death and is now risen, exalted, and enthroned by God at his right hand. So how could he possibly condemn us since he is continually praying for our triumph? Romans 8:31-34 TPT*

Our troubles, pressures and problems, persecutions and trials, are not set up for our destruction but for something else! It is for us to inherit the Kingdom of God!

This process of fulfilment of righteousness and the inheritance of the Kingdom starts with our newborn experience.

*He is given to us like an engagement ring, as the first installment of what's coming! He is our hope-promise of a **future inheritance** which seals us until we have all of redemption's promises and experience complete freedom—all for the supreme glory and honor of God! Ephesians 1:14 TPT*

Do not miss this revelation!

We are sealed UNTIL we have all of redemption's promises and UNTIL we experience complete FREEDOM!

This means Adonai is leading us out of Egypt, through the Red Sea, out of the wilderness and over the Jordan River. He is destroying the giants

in Jericho for us to inherit the Promised Land. Now we can enter into our dominion rest.

Who could ever divorce us from the endless love of God's Anointed One? Absolutely no one! For nothing in the universe has the power to diminish his love toward us. Troubles, pressures, and problems are unable to come between us and heaven's love. What about persecutions, deprivations, dangers, and death threats? No, for they are all impotent to hinder omnipotent love,³⁶ even though it is written: All day long we face death threats for your sake, God. We are considered to be nothing more than sheep to be slaughtered!³⁷ Yet even in the midst of all these things, we triumph over them all, for God has made us to be more than conquerors, and his demonstrated love is our glorious victory over everything!³⁸ So now I live with the confidence that there is nothing in the universe with the power to separate us from God's love. I'm convinced that his love will triumph over death, life's troubles, fallen angels, or dark rulers in the heavens. There is nothing in our present or future circumstances that can weaken his love.³⁹ There is no power above us or beneath us—no power that could ever be found in the universe that can distance us from God's passionate love, which is lavished upon us through our Lord Jesus, the Anointed One! Romans 8:35-39 TPT

A few years ago, the Holy Spirit used the epistle of the apostle Peter to lead me to the apocalypse of full salvation. Since then, this revelation

has been growing and growing. I realise the Body of Christ does not acknowledge the importance of this profound Biblical truth.

*Through our faith, the mighty power of God constantly guards us until our **full salvation** is ready to be revealed in the last time. ⁶ May the thought of this cause you to jump for joy, even though lately you've had to put up with the grief of many trials. ⁷ But these only reveal the sterling core of your faith, which is far more valuable than gold that perishes, for even gold is refined by fire. Your authentic faith will result in even more praise, glory, and honor when Jesus the Anointed One is revealed ⁸ You love him passionately although you have not seen him, but through believing in him you are saturated with an ecstatic joy, indescribably sublime and immersed in glory. ⁹ **For you are reaping the harvest of your faith—the full salvation promised you—your souls' victory!***

1 Peter 1:5-9 TPT

Persecuted for Doing Good

*Why would anyone harm you if you're passionate and devoted to pleasing God? ¹⁴ But even if you happen to **suffer** for doing what is right, you will have the joyful experience of the blessing of God. And Don't be intimidated or terrified by those who would terrify you. ¹⁵ But give reverent honor in your hearts to the Anointed One and treat him as the holy Master of your lives. And if anyone asks about the hope living within you, always be ready to explain your faith ¹⁶ with gentleness and respect. Maintain*

a clean conscience, so that those who slander you for living a pure life in Christ will have to lie about you and will be ashamed because of their slander. ¹⁷ For it is better to suffer for doing good, if it is in God's plan, than for doing evil. 1 Peter 3:13-17 TPT

Christ's Victory

*Christ suffered and died for sins once and for all—the innocent for the guilty—to bring you near to God by his body being put to death and by being raised to life by the Spirit. ¹⁹ He went in the spiritual realm and made a proclamation to the spirits in prison ²⁰ because of their disobedience of long ago. For during the time of Noah God patiently waited while the ark was being prepared, but only a few were brought safely through the floodwaters: a total of eight souls. ²¹ **This was a prophetic picture of the immersion that now saves you**—not a bathing of the physical body but rather the response of a good conscience before God through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, ²² who is now in heaven at the place of supreme authority next to God. The very powers of heaven, including every angel and authority, now yield in submission to him. 1 Peter 3:18-22 TPT*

Even the story of Noah was a typology of our water baptism for the remission of sin to receive a good conscience before God and receive a new resurrected life in Christ!
Glory to God! This brings victory over our last enemy - Death!
***O, death where is your sting?* 1 Corinthians 15:55**

Suffering and Glory

Beloved friends, if life gets extremely difficult, with many tests, don't be bewildered as though something strange were overwhelming you. ¹³ Instead, continue to rejoice, for you, in a measure, have shared in the sufferings of the Anointed One so that you can share in the revelation of his glory and celebrate with even greater gladness! ¹⁴ If you are insulted because of the name of Christ, you are greatly blessed, because the Spirit of glory and power, who is the Spirit of God, rests upon you. 1 Peter 4:12-14 TPT

Our suffering is not because of living an unrighteous life!

Let none of you merit suffering as a murderer, or thief, or criminal, or as one who meddles in the affairs of others. ¹⁶ If you suffer for being a Christian, don't consider it a disgrace but a privilege. Glorify God because you carry the Anointed One's name. ¹⁷ For the time is ripe for judgment to begin in God's own household. And if it starts with us, what will be the fate of those who refuse to obey the gospel of God?"¹⁸ And: If the righteous are barely saved, what will become of the wicked and godless? ¹⁹ So then, those who suffer for following God's will should enfold their lives into the Creator, who will never fail them, and continue to always do what is right. 1 Peter 4:15-19 TPT

Peter is bringing everything together! The baptism of suffering is bringing us unto restoration!

*Resist him and be firm in the faith, because you know that your brothers throughout the world are undergoing the same kinds of suffering. ¹⁰ After you have suffered for a little while, the God of all grace, who called you by the Messiah Jesus to his eternal glory, **will restore you, establish you, strengthen you, and support you.** ¹¹ Power belongs to him forever and ever! Amen.*
1 Peter 5:9-11 ISV

Love and Purity

Now, because of your obedience to the truth, you have purified your very souls, and this empowers you to be full of love for your fellow believers. So express this sincere love toward one another passionately and with a pure heart. ²³ For through the eternal and living Word of God you have been born again. And this "seed" that he planted within you can never be destroyed but will live and grow inside of you forever. For: ²⁴ Human beings are frail and temporary, like grass, and the glory of man fleeting like blossoms of the field. The grass dries and withers and the flowers fall off, ²⁵ but the Word of the Lord endures forever! And this is the Word that was announced to you!
1 Peter 1:22-25 TPT

In conclusion to our "baptism of suffering", Paul explains:

We feel a personal responsibility to continually be thanking God for you, our spiritual family, every time we pray. And we have every reason to do so because your faith is growing marvelously beyond measure. The unselfish love

*each of you share for one another is increasing and overflowing! ⁴ We point to you as an example of unwavering faith for all the churches of God. **We boast about how you continue to demonstrate unflinching endurance through all the persecutions and painful trials you are experiencing.** 2 Thessalonians 1:3-4 TPT*

Do you demonstrate unflinching endurance? Do you show courage in the face of danger? Do you persevere bravely?

Or do you fear and hesitate? Are you constantly complaining while going through difficult experiences?

If you can truly say “Yes!” to the positive questions, it will make you worthy of inheriting the Kingdom of God!

*All of this prove that God’s judgment is always perfect and is intended to make you **worthy of inheriting the kingdom of God**, which is why you are going through these troubles. 2 Thessalonians 1:5 TPT*

All trials and persecutions are tests to overcome, not only to be set apart from the rest but also to receive the qualification for participating in the first resurrection. When we endure to the end, we will receive the victor’s crown which is the reward waiting for us in the heavens!

It is crucial to pass the test!

My fellow believers, when it seems as though you are facing nothing but difficulties, see it as an invaluable opportunity to experience the greatest joy that you can! ³ For you know that when your faith is tested it stirs up power within you to endure all things. ⁴ And then as your

endurance grows even stronger it will release perfection into every part of your being until there is nothing missing and nothing lacking. James 1:2-4 TPT

If your faith remains strong, even while surrounded by life's difficulties, you will continue to experience the untold blessings of God! True happiness comes as you pass the test with faith and receive the victorious crown of life promised to every lover of God! James 1:12 TPT

Isn't it obvious that all runners on the racetrack keep on running to win, but only one receives the victor's prize? Yet each one of you must run the race to be victorious. ²⁵ A true athlete will be disciplined in every respect, practicing constant self-control in order to win a laurel wreath that quickly withers. But we run our race to win a victor's crown that will last forever. ²⁶ For that reason, I don't run just for exercise or box like one throwing aimless punches, ²⁷ but I train like a champion athlete. I subdue my body and get it under my control, so that after preaching the good news to others I myself won't be disqualified. 1 Corinthians 9:24-27 TPT

Both Paul and James point us to the victor's prize, which is a crown waiting for us in heaven IF we endure to the end! We must remain faithful to pass the test. Paul was very concerned that he himself might be disqualified. He was not concerned about losing his salvation but about being disqualified from receiving his reward - his crown.

In conclusion, the baptism of suffering is to:

- Inherit the Kingdom.

- Become sons and daughters of Adonai.
- Transfer His perfect righteousness to us.

LAYING ON OF HANDS

Our hands are crucial instruments in God's service. We use them to touch, comfort, and make contact with each other. Therefore, our hands have spiritual purposes. We are Adonai's vessels and God needs our bodies to abide in. He uses our hands, mouths, ears, minds, emotions, and feelings to express Himself to the world. God needs our hands to transmit His power and authority to others. The laying on of hands brings continuity in the Body of Christ between a senior and junior pastor, between one generation and another. In a spiritual context, it transmits blessings, authority, wisdom, the Holy Spirit, spiritual gifts, and ministries.

ADONAI IS THE ONE WHO APPOINTS

God's kingdom is not based on any earthly principles. Most earthly systems are based on a voting system. The Kingdom of Heaven is not based on a voting system, but Adonai appoints those whom He elects. No man can appoint God's apostles, prophets, pastors, evangelists, and teachers. What a pity that the earthly voting system often operates in the institutional churches where pastors are appointed. This often has catastrophic results! **Adonai should always be the One who appoints!**

*You did not choose me, **but I chose you and appointed** you so that you might go and bear fruit, fruit that will last*

and so that whatever you ask in my name the Father will give you. John 15:16 NIV

THE PURPOSE

The exact purpose of the laying on of hands is the following:

- To recognise, but not to appoint.
- To set apart.
- To transfer authority.
- To equip with spiritual gifts and authority.
- To heal.
- To bless.

Let us look at examples of the laying on of hands in both the Old and New Testaments.

OLD TESTAMENT

EPHRAIM AND MANASSEH

In Genesis 48, Joseph brought his two sons, Ephraim and Manasseh, to his father, Jacob. It was a common act of respect to ask the grandparents for their blessing on the grandchildren. According to tradition, the older son had to receive the father's right-hand blessing. But, in this case, Jacob insisted that this blessing should go to the younger brother, Ephraim. He therefore crossed his hands and placed his right hand on Ephraim and the left on Manasseh. Jacob's blessings determined the future of these two sons of Joseph.

ELIJAH

Adonai ordained the laying on of hands to transfer power, gifts, authority, and blessings from one person to another. Hands are instruments for the use of the Lord. When the Lord's own hand came upon Elijah, he was empowered to outrun the chariots of the king (1 Kings 18:46).

GOD'S SIGNET RING

'And I will make you like my signet ring, for I have chosen you,' declares the LORD Almighty. Haggai 2:23 NIV

We are the signet ring on God's right hand. A signet ring was used instead of, or together with, a signature, to give authentication to an official document. He uses us as His signet ring to approve His works in the Body of Christ. (*Download "To be His Signet Ring" from our website; www.berashithministry.co.za*)

ISAAC AND JACOB

Isaac was supposed to bless Esau, his oldest son. But Jacob and his mother, Rebecca, betrayed him by pretending that Jacob was Esau. They covered Jacob's arms with animal hide which made the blind Isaac believe he was the hairy Esau. Isaac's blessing was transferred to Jacob instead of Esau. Once the blessing was transferred through the hands of Isaac it could not be reversed. This blessing was later passed on from Jacob to his own 12 sons. Read Genesis 49 to see how Jacob blessed and prophesied over each of his sons. These blessings determined the

destiny of each of them. Juda, e.g., means praise. Jacob spoke the following blessing over him.

[Judah], your brothers will praise you. Your hand will be on the neck of your enemies. Your father's sons will bow down to you. ⁹ Judah, you are a lion cub. You have come back from the kill, my son. He lies down and rests like a lion. He is like a lioness. Who dares to disturb him? ¹⁰ A scepter will never depart from Judah nor a ruler's staff from between his feet until Shiloh comes and the people obey him. Genesis 49:8-10 GWT

It is no coincidence that Yashuah is well-known as the Lion of Judah!

MOSES

Adonai commanded Moses to lay hands on Joshua, thus transferring authority to him. Notice that **God appointed Joshua**. He was not elected by a committee!

"Select Nun's son Joshua. The Spirit is in that man." the LORD answered Moses. "You are to lay your hand on him ¹⁹ and make him stand in front of Eleazar the priest and the entire community. Then you are to set him in charge right before their eyes, ²⁰ turning over your authority to him so that the entire community of Israel knows to obey him." Numbers 27:18-20 ISV

Moses understood that authority could only be passed to Joshua by the laying on of hands.

*And thou shalt put **some of thine honor upon him**, that all the congregation of the children of Israel may be obedient.* Numbers 27:20 KJV

So Moses did what the LORD had commanded him. He took Joshua, made him stand in the presence of Eleazar the priest and the entire community,²³ laid his hands on him, and charged him, just as the LORD had commanded, using Moses' authority. Numbers 27:22-23 ISV

Notice, verse 20 states that only some of Moses' authority should be put on Joshua and not all of it.

Give to him some of your authority so that the whole community of Bnei-Yisrael will obey him.
Numbers 27:20 TLV

After Moses had laid hands on him, Joshua was full of wisdom.

Now Nun's son Joshua was full of the spirit of wisdom, because Moses had placed his hands on him, so Israelis listened to him and did what the LORD had commanded Moses. Deuteronomy 34:9 ISV

Moses also laid hands on Aaron and his sons to receive divine impartation. Again, they were appointed by Adonai and not by human election.

ELISHA

Elisha had received a double portion of blessing from Elijah. Second Kings 13 tells that on his sick bed, Elisha put his hands upon the hands

of King Joash, who held a bow and arrows. The king then shot an arrow toward the enemy to hit the target.

Even after Elisha's death, his anointing was so strong that, when they buried him and his bones touched a dead man, the man was raised from the dead and stood up on his feet.

And Elisha died, and they buried him. And the bands of the Moabites invaded the land at the coming in of the year. ²¹ And it came to pass, as they were burying a man, that, behold, they spied a band of men; and they cast the man into the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the man was let down, and touched the bones of Elisha, he revived, and stood up on his feet. 2 Kings 13:20-21 KJV

NEW TESTAMENT

THE LITTLE CHILDREN

*Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray.
Matthew 19:13 KJV*

Mark 10:16 says Yashuah took them in His arms and blessed them.

THE LAYING ON OF HANDS FOR HEALING

JAIRUS

When Jairus saw Yashuah in the synagogue, he begged Him to come and lay hands on his dying daughter.

... and begged him urgently, saying, "My little daughter is dying. Come and lay your hands on her so that she may get well and live. Mark 5:23 ISV

NAZARETH

In His hometown, Yashuah could not do mighty works because of the unbelief of the people, but he still laid hands on the sick to heal them (Mark 6:5).

THE BLIND MAN

Jesus led a blind man out of the city, spat into his eyes, placed His hands on him and asked, "*Do you see anything?*" (Mark 8:23). The man replied, "*I see men as trees, walking*" (verse 24), implying that he could not yet see clearly. Yashuah had to put His hands on the man's eyes a second time before his sight was restored (verse 25).

THE WOMAN WITH A DISABLING SPIRIT

Yashuah laid His hands on a woman with a disabling spirit, and she was immediately made straight and glorified God (Luke 13:13).

THE GREAT COMMISSION

Yashuah gave us the great commission to go into the world and preach the Gospel to every creature (Mark 16:15). Then He said:

*They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; **they shall lay hands on the sick**, and they shall recover.* Mark 16:18 KJV

Jesus commanded us to lay hands on the sick for them to receive **healing**.

Are there any sick among you? Then ask the elders of the church to come and pray over the sick and anoint them with oil in the name of our Lord· ¹⁵ And the prayer of faith will heal the sick and the Lord will raise them up, and if they have committed sins they will be forgiven.
James 5:14-15 TPT

*Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and **he laid his hands on every one** of them, and healed them.
⁴¹ And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.* Luke 4:40-41 KJV

Jesus practised the fundamental principle of laying hands on the sick to heal them and to bless people. Just before His ascension, He led His disciples out of town as far as Bethany. He lifted His hands and blessed them (Luke 24:50).

Although there is ample proof from the scriptures, many people still do not believe in the laying on of hands to heal the sick. Many houses are collapsing because of the absence of an essential and fundamental foundation, including the laying on of hands!

What are you using your hands for? Yashuah needs them to heal His people!

THE LAYING ON OF HANDS FOR THE IMPARTATION OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

John and Peter were sent to Samaria to lay hands on the converts so they could receive the Holy Ghost.

Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost. Acts 8:17 KJV

THE LAYING ON OF HANDS TO COMMISSION SERVANTS OF THE CHURCH

Acts 6 states the disciples could no longer do all the work themselves. Extra helpers had to be appointed to assist them. Acts 6:3 says, "...whom we may appoint over this business." The helpers were appointed and not elected. The Greek word for "**deacon**" is a "**servant**" or "**helper**". God only promotes the meek of heart who are willing to serve. **Are you serving others, or are you waiting to be served?**

LAYING ON OF HANDS TO SEPARATE PEOPLE FOR A SPECIFIC TASK

Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them. Acts 13:2b KJV

As they were worshipping, the Holy Spirit spoke the above words. This implies that someone was prophesying under the influence of the Holy Ghost. The Spirit appointed the best disciples for the job!

In Acts 14, a city was divided. Paul and Barnabas preached the Gospel under severe tribulation and persecution. They appointed elders in all the churches by the laying on of hands.

*Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God. ²³ And when they had **ordained them elders in every church**, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed. Acts 14:22-23 KJV*

Paul wrote to Timothy and gave him special instructions for appointing elders. These elders had to adhere to strict requirements.

Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially they who labor in the word and doctrine.
1 Timothy 5:17 KJV

Today, very few elders are worthy of double honor. Most are not underlaid in word and doctrine! We should appoint only people who fit the profile as described in Titus and Timothy.

LAYING ON OF HANDS FOR THE TRANSFERENCE OF GIFTS

Paul reminded Timothy to not neglect the spiritual gifts he had received when Paul laid hands upon him. Adonai imparted gifts using Paul's hands.

I'm writing to encourage you to fan into a flame and rekindle the fire of the spiritual gift God imparted to you when I laid my hands upon you. 2 Timothy 1:6 TPT

The laying on of hands was so important to the early believers that Paul longed to go to Rome to impart some spiritual gifts onto the believers.

For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established.
Romans 1:11 KJV

THE LAYING ON OF HANDS FOR PROPHECY VERSUS FORTUNE-TELLING

The laying on of hands to receive prophecy should not be confused with fortune-telling. In Macedonia, Paul met a woman operating under the spirit of divination.

As we were on our way to the place of prayer, we were met by a slave girl who was possessed by a spirit of divination [claiming to foretell future events and to discover hidden knowledge], and she brought her owners much gain by her fortune-telling. ¹⁷ She kept following Paul and [the rest of] us, shouting loudly, These men are the servants of the Most High God! They announce to you the way of salvation! ¹⁸ And she did this for many days. Then Paul, being sorely annoyed and worn out, turned and said to the spirit within her, I charge you in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her! And it came out that very moment. ¹⁹ But when her owners discovered that their hope of profit was gone, they caught hold of Paul and Silas

and dragged them before the authorities in the forum (marketplace), [where trials are held]. ²⁰ And when they had brought them before the magistrates, they declared, These fellows are Jews and they are throwing our city into great confusion. ²¹ They encourage the practice of customs which it is unlawful for us Romans to accept or observe! ²² The crowd [also] joined in the attack upon them, and the rulers tore the clothes off of them and commanded that they be beaten with rods. ²³ And when they had struck them with many blows, they threw them into prison, charging the jailer to keep them safely.

Acts 16:16-23 AMPC

Be very cautious who lays hands on you! If a person is in bondage under the influence of the Jezebel spirit, pornography, etc., those spirits may be transferred to you. Be very sensitive to the warning of the Holy Spirit. Become spiritually mature so you can distinguish between good and evil. Paul immediately identified the spirit of divination. This spirit, too, immediately identified Paul and his travellers as people of God.

The marks of His crucifixion remained in the body of Christ even after His resurrection. They will be visible to eternity! This depicts the important role the acts of our hands play in the Kingdom!

RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD

The Greek word "***anastasis***" is translated into English as "*resurrection*". We can break this word into two parts - "*ana*", which means "to repeat something", and "*stasis*", meaning "to stand". Thus, "*anastasis*" means to stand up or be upright again or to arise again. In this case, rising from the dead – resurrection.

I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live. John 11:25 KJV

What Jesus meant was, "***I AM STANDING UP IN POWER!***"

This implies that even when we are knocked down flat to the ground, He has the power to put us back up on our feet! He is the "anastasis" - the Resurrection! He is our power to stand up!

In my opinion, the most important principle of the doctrinal foundation is the resurrection. Without resurrection, there is no hope, no Christianity, no faith. It is the central doctrine of the Faith. If for this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. We have a better hope, and that hope is in the resurrection of Christ Jesus.

If the only benefit of our hope in Christ is limited to this life on earth, we deserve to be pitied more than all others!

²⁰ But the truth is, Christ is risen from the dead, as the firstfruit of a great resurrection harvest of those who have died. 1 Corinthians 15:19-20 TPT

We will later have a complete discussion on this resurrection harvest. Christ was risen from the dead, and He never died again. There will be yet another harvest of resurrection but each according to its appropriate order.

*But each one in his proper order: Christ, the firstfruits,
then those who belong to Christ in his presence.*

1 Corinthians 15:23 TPT

Yashuah stood at the tomb of Lazarus, called him forth, and he came alive. But he died again! The Father resurrected His Son from the dead and our Messiah will never die again! Glory to God! That is resurrection power!

*Yes, God raised Jesus to life! **And since God's Spirit of Resurrection lives in you, he will also raise your dying body to life by the same Spirit that breathes life into you!*** Romans 8:11 TPT

We have resurrection power inside of us. This is called Dunamis Power. Believers should not only acknowledge this Biblical truth but also apply the "dynamite" power that He put within us!

The Messiah died for our sins, fulfilling the prophecies of the Scriptures. ⁴ He was buried in a tomb and was raised from the dead after three days, as foretold in the Scriptures. ⁵ Then he appeared to Peter the Rock and to the twelve apostles. ⁶ He also appeared to more than five hundred of his followers at the same time, most of whom are still alive as I write this, though a few have passed away. ⁷ Then he appeared to Jacob and to all the apostles. ⁸ Last of all he appeared in front of me, like one born prematurely, ripped from the womb.
1 Corinthians 15:3b-8 TPT

Peter explains that he, too, was an eyewitness of the Messiah.

*We were not retelling some masterfully crafted legend when we informed you of the power and appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, for we saw his magnificence and splendor unveiled before our very eyes. ¹⁷ Yes, Father God lavished upon him radiant glory and honor when his distinct voice spoke out of the realm of majestic glory, endorsing him with these words: This is my cherished Son, marked by my love. All my delight is found in him! ¹⁸ And we ourselves heard that voice resound from the heavens while we were with him on the holy mountain. ¹⁹ **And so we have been given the prophetic word—the written message of the prophets, made more reliable and fully validated** by the confirming voice of God on the Mount of Transfiguration. And you will continue to do well if you stay focused on it. For this prophetic message is like a piercing light shining in a gloomy place until the dawning of a new day, when the Morning Star rises in your hearts.*

2 Peter 1:16-19 TPT

The prophetic word is more reliable and validated than any eyewitness! Remember, the Biblical truth is that the scriptures cannot be broken (John 10:35)!

Christ's Resurrection Confirmed in the Old Testament

Let us look at the primary confirmation of Christ's resurrection in the prophetic scriptures of the Old Testament.

*Because I set you, Yahweh, always close to me, my confidence will never be weakened, for I experience your wraparound presence every moment.⁹ My heart and soul explode with joy—full of glory! Even my body will rest confident and secure.¹⁰ **For you will not abandon me to the realm of death, nor will you allow your Faithful One to experience corruption.**¹¹ Because of you, I know the path of life, as I taste the fullness of joy in your presence. At your right side I experience divine pleasures forevermore! Psalm 16:8-11 TPT*

The Jubilee Bible states in verse 10 that God would not leave Christ's soul in Sheol.

I have set the LORD always before me: because when he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved:⁹ Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoices: my flesh also shall rest secure:¹⁰ For thou wilt not leave my soul in Sheol; neither wilt thou suffer thy Merciful One to see corruption:¹¹ Thou wilt show me the path of life: in thy presence is fullness of joy; in thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore. Psalm 16:8-11 JUB

After the outpouring of the Holy Ghost on the day of Pentecost, Peter spoke to the people.

...whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death because it was not possible for him to be held by it.²⁵ For David speaks concerning him, I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved,²⁶ therefore did my heart rejoice,

and my tongue was glad; moreover even my flesh shall rest in hope ²⁷ because thou wilt not leave my soul in Hades, neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. ²⁸ Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

Acts 2:24-28 JUB

Peter quoted David from Psalm 16, referring to the prophetic word that "**Sheol**" (Hebrew for "**Hades**") could not hold the Messiah, nor did His Body see any corruption.

Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. ³⁰ Therefore being a prophet and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up the Christ to sit on his throne; ³¹ he, seeing this before, spoke of the resurrection of the Christ, that his soul was not left in Hades, neither did his flesh see corruption. ³² This Jesus God has raised up, of whom we all are witnesses. Acts 2:29-32 JUB

Read the profound words David wrote in Psalm 71. Here, he refers to "US", instead of "him".

*Even though you've let **us** sink down with trials and troubles, I know you will revive **us** again, lifting us up from the dust of death. ²¹ Give **us** even more greatness than before. Turn and comfort **us** once again.*
Psalm 71:20-21 TPT

The Old Testament prophetic word declared that Christ would be raised from the dead, and we would one day be raised with Him.

What a glorious and victorious day when the Father raised His Son from the dead and stripped all the powers and principalities of darkness!

Then Jesus made a public spectacle of all the powers and principalities of darkness, stripping away from them every weapon and all their spiritual authority and power to accuse us. And by the power of the cross, Jesus led them around as prisoners in a procession of triumph. He was not their prisoner; they were his. Colossians 2:15 TPT

The foundational New Testament scripture about the resurrection was recorded by Paul.

*For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins **according to the scriptures**; ⁴ And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day **according to the scriptures**.
1 Corinthians 15:3-4 KJV*

The apostles had access to the Old Testament only and they knew these Old Testament scriptures very well. Paul referred to these prophetic words in the Old Testament.

Hosea also prophesied that we would be revived after two days, and that He would raise us up on the third day.

Come, and let us return unto the LORD: for he hath torn, and he will heal us; he hath smitten, and he will bind us up. ² After two days will he revive us: in the

third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight. Hosea 6:1-2 KJV

This Old Testament prophecy not only brought facts but also revealed the inner spiritual significance of the facts stated and predicted. The first is the prediction that the resurrection of Christ would take place on the 3rd day. The second is that His resurrection would indeed also be our resurrection!

Christ's resurrection is the cornerstone of our FAITH!

When Yashuah was raised from the dead, He stripped the enemy of all its powers. God quickened us together with Christ and raised us up together with Him. We are seated together with Christ in heavenly places. Saints, we are already victorious because of Christ's resurrection!

But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, ⁵ Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)⁶ And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.
Ephesians 2:4-6 KJV

When we lay down the foundation according to the Doctrine of Christ, we must acknowledge the importance of baptism. The outward act of the above scripture is water baptism.

Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.
Colossians 2:12 KJV

How can there be any doubt that there must first be a funeral before we can be raised with Christ! Our bodies must be buried!

Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. Romans 6:4 KJV

When we believe in Him and are baptised, we are identified with His burial and resurrection and are seated with Him on the throne in the heavenly realm. There is, however, a condition - *"If we follow on to know Him!"*

Then shall we know, if we follow on to know the LORD: his going forth is prepared as the morning; and he shall come unto us as the rain, as the latter and former rain unto the earth. Hosea 6:3 KJV

Resurrection is only for those who pursue and follow on to know the Lord. Then follows the latter rain. Scriptures mention both early and latter rain. The latter rain refers to the outpouring of the Holy Ghost.

Jesus died and His body was buried, but on the third day He was raised from the dead. Likewise, the believer must also participate in Christ's death, burial, and resurrection. This takes place through baptism, as explained. We are then identified with Christ's resurrection.

Christ ascended into the heavens to return to His Father but promised He would never leave nor forsake us! He promised to send us the Holy Spirit to help us in our walk on earth. We can say that Christ ascended and simultaneously returned to us as the Holy Spirit.

Let us pause here for a moment so this profound truth can sink in deeply! We need to fully understand the importance of baptisms **so we can participate in all the benefits Christ's death, burial and resurrection provided for us.** The apostles preached only this pure message of the Gospel which is His death, burial, and resurrection. Paul was adamant that anyone who would preach another Gospel should be accursed.

Christ commanded us to be witnesses of this Gospel and for this purpose we need the Holy Spirit.

But ye shall receive the virtue of the Holy Spirit which shall come upon you, and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem and in all Judaea and in Samaria and unto the uttermost part of the earth. Acts 1:8 JUB

Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. ⁸ But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

Galatians 1:7-8 KJV

NEW TESTAMENT WITNESSES

For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; ⁴ And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures: ⁵ And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: ⁶ After that, he

was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep. ⁷ After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. ⁸ And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. 1 Corinthians 15:3-8 KJV

The following facts were recorded for the Corinthians.

- Christ died, was buried, and rose again.
- It happened according to the scriptures and was already predicted in the Old Testament.
- There were several eyewitnesses recorded in the New Testament:
 - Cephas (Peter) - Luke 24:33-34
 - The twelve disciples - Acts 1:1-3; John 20:19-22
 - Two men on the road to Emmaus - Luke 24:13-32
 - Five hundred other men - 1 Corinthians 15:6
 - James and other disciples - 1 Corinthians 15:7
 - Paul - 1 Corinthians 15:8

And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. ⁹ Yes, I am the most insignificant of all the apostles, unworthy even to be called an apostle, because I hunted down believers and persecuted God's church. 1 Corinthians 15:8-9 KJV

Notice Paul's humble heart as he sees himself as most insignificant and unworthy because he persecuted the church of Christ. His attitude proves that he was saved! Therefore, he preached **ONLY** this message of the Gospel of Jesus Christ - ***His Death, His Burial and His Resurrection!***

This Gospel was tested by Old Testament prophecies and also by reliable witnesses. May the Lord open our eyes and ears to this revelation.

The Lord GOD hath opened mine ear, and I was not rebellious, neither turned away back. ⁶I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not my face from shame and spitting. Isaiah 50:5-6 KJV

BEGOTTEN AGAIN/BORN AGAIN

The Old Testament foresaw the born-again experience that would follow Christ's resurrection.

After two days will he revive us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight. Hosea 6:2 KJV

We are identified with His death and resurrection. Even though we were dead, He made us alive, raised us up and seated us with Him.

The following scriptures are written in the past tense, which confirms that it had already been accomplished.

But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, ⁵ Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) ⁶ And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus. Ephesians 2:46 KJV

The word “together” is used three times. We are quickened and raised “together” with Him in baptism and “together” with Him we now sit in heavenly places (Romans 6:4; Colossians 2:12).

For it is written: The first man, Adam, became a living soul. The last Adam became the life-giving Spirit. ⁴⁶ However, the spiritual didn't come first. The natural precedes the spiritual. ⁴⁷ The first man was from the dust of the earth; the second Man is Yahweh, from the realm of heaven. ⁴⁸ The first one, made from dust, has a race of people just like him, who are also made from dust. The One sent from heaven has a race of heavenly people who are just like him. ⁴⁹ Once we carried the likeness of the man of dust, but now let us carry the likeness of the man of heaven.

1 Corinthians 15:45-49 TPT

In this passage, we see how we are being transformed.

- From the old creation to the new creation.
- From the First Man who was a living being, to the Last Adam who became a life-giving spirit!
- The First Man was from the dust of the earth, but the Second Man was from heaven!
- He rose on the 3rd day and is now the Head of the new creation man!

*Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath **begotten us** again unto a **lively hope** by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, ⁴ To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, ⁵ Who are kept by the power of God through faith*

unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

1 Peter 1:3-5 KJV

"*Has begotten us*" means a new birth. The ISV states that, through the resurrection of Jesus from the dead, He has **granted us a new birth**, resulting in an immortal hope. He did this because of His great mercy!

Now we can see that there can be no new birth without the resurrection of Christ. A new birth cannot be established by man's effort! It is a gift of God so no man can boast of his salvation.

*Salvation is not a reward for the good things we have done,
so none of us can boast about it.* Ephesians 2:9 NLT

He has begotten us. In other words, He granted us a new birth which is our living hope, and a life in Christ Jesus. We pass over from the old nature into the new order. We become a new race - an Emmanuel race with Messiah as the Head. We are now the "GOD WITH US" race! We have received a new source of life in Christ, who is in heaven.

Christ's resurrection is your resurrection too. This is why we are to yearn for all that is above, for that's where Christ sits enthroned at the place of all power, honor, and authority!² *Yes, feast on all the treasures of the heavenly realm and fill your thoughts with heavenly realities, and not with the distractions of the natural realm.*³ *Your crucifixion with Christ has severed the tie to this life, and now your true life is hidden away in God in Christ.*⁴ ***And as Christ himself is seen for who he really is, who you really are will also be revealed, for you are now one with him in his glory!***
Colossians 3:1-4 TPT

Meditate on the fact that we are now born from above, just as the Second Adam is from above. Our resources are not from the earthly realm. Every need is covered and provided for. While living this earthly life, we struggle to grasp this promise and live from it. We should be at rest because we also sit enthroned with Christ and have all the power and authority given to us.

Why then are we still being destroyed by earthly realities? Our thoughts should be filled with heavenly realities! Christ's death, burial and resurrection bring us into righteousness. We have received right standing before the throne. For the believer, seeing the "man in the mirror" is seeing how God has been seeing us from the beginning, even before the fall of Adam, which resulted in sin's devastation to human hearts. The "man in the mirror" is the new creation man (James 1:24 TPT).

So no wonder we don't give up. For even though our outer person gradually wears out, our inner being is renewed every single day. ¹⁷ We view our slight, short-lived troubles in the light of eternity. We see our difficulties as the substance that produces for us an eternal, weighty glory far beyond all comparison, ¹⁸ because we don't focus our attention on what is seen but on what is unseen. For what is seen is temporary, but the unseen realm is eternal.
2 Corinthians 4:16-18 TPT

JUSTIFICATION

Because of His righteousness, we are justified. That means we are made right with Christ after the first Adam had failed. Because of Christ's

resurrection, we have right standing with Adonai. Let us have a look at the example of Abraham.

*He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; ²¹ And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. ²² **And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness. ²³ Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; ²⁴ But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; ²⁵ Who was delivered for our offenses, and was raised again for our justification.*** Romans 4:20-25 KJV

Paul used Abraham as an example of righteousness imputed onto someone because of his faith and not for keeping the law. Now we must receive this righteousness through faith! We must believe that Christ delivered us from all our offences and justified us through His resurrection!

We cannot earn right standing before God by keeping any law or by doing anything right! It is solely because Christ was raised from the dead for our justification!

Christ's resurrection brings justification to the believer. Righteousness was credited to us for free. We did not earn it! Now we must exercise the same faith as Abraham did to receive our righteousness.

Christ paid in full the final penalty for our sins. God's justice was satisfied by Jesus' death. By His resurrection, the Father provided complete righteousness to the believer. My dear brother and sister, if Christ were not alive, we would still be lost in our sins, and our faith would be a

fantasy (1 Corinthians 15:17 TPT). By His resurrection, He reversed the death penalty.

For God made the only one who did not know sin to become sin for us, so that we might become the righteousness of God through our union with him. 2 Corinthians 5:21 TPT

This justification made us completely righteous, as if we had never sinned. Complete sinlessness is the only righteousness ever accepted in heaven.

COMMITMENT

Many make it to salvation, but few ever make a sincere commitment to the Christian life.

But we receive the faith-righteousness that speaks an entirely different message: "Don't for a moment think you need to climb into the heavens to find the Messiah and bring him down,⁷ or to descend into the underworld to bring him up from the dead."⁸ But the faith-righteousness we receive speaks to us in these words of Moses: "God's living message is very close to you, as close as your own heart beating in your chest and as near as the tongue in your mouth."⁹ And what is God's "living message"? ***It is the revelation of faith for salvation, which is the message that we preach. For if you publicly declare with your mouth that Jesus is Lord and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will experience salvation.***¹⁰ ***The heart***

that believes in him receives the gift of the righteousness of God—and then the mouth confesses, resulting in salvation. Romans 10:6-10 TPT

Here we find two requirements, namely believing in the heart which brings righteousness, and confessing with our mouth, which brings salvation. Notice the commitment to His Lordship, which is key to our salvation. Christ's victory over the enemy is also our victory over all enemies - even DEATH! We must realise our bodies are perishing and we have a better hope of resurrection. Because of Christ's resurrection, Christianity is the only religion with an answer to the problem of death.

John was the beloved disciple of Jesus. He knew the Messiah well as the Carpenter's Son, but when he saw the resurrected Messiah in a vision on the Isle of Patmos, he fell to the ground like a dead man.

I was in the spirit realm on the Lord's day, and I heard behind me a loud voice sounding like a trumpet, ¹¹ saying to me: Write in a book what you see and send it to the seven churches: to Ephesus, to Smyrna, to Pergamum, to Thyatira, to Sardis, to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea. ¹² When I turned to see the voice that was speaking to me, I saw seven golden lampstands. ¹³ And walking among the lampstands, I saw someone like a son of man, wearing a full-length robe with a golden sash over his chest. ¹⁴ His head and his hair were white like wool—white as glistening snow. And his eyes were like flames of fire! ¹⁵ His feet were gleaming like bright metal, as though they were glowing in a fire, and his voice was like the roar of many rushing waters. ¹⁶ In his right hand he held seven stars, and out of his mouth was a sharp, double-edged sword. And his face

was shining like the brightness of the blinding sun! ¹⁷ *When I saw him, I fell down at his feet as good as dead, but he laid his right hand on me and I heard his reassuring voice saying: **Don't yield to fear. I am the Beginning and I am the End,*** ¹⁸ ***the Living One! I was dead, but now look—I am alive forever and ever. And I hold the keys that unlock death and the unseen world.***

Revelation 1:10-18 TPT

The Messiah declared, “*I was dead, but now I am alive and hold the keys of death.*” Do you truly want to experience resurrection? Or are you living your earthly life without any hope of an eternal future?

We read in Revelation 6:8 of the pale horse. The name of him that sat on it was **Death**, and **Hades** followed him to kill. Hades and Death are evil angels ruling over darkness. As satanic angels, Death claims the bodies of the dead, and Hades claims their souls! But Jesus went into those places and stripped them of all their power and principalities.

Then Jesus made a public spectacle of all the powers and principalities of darkness, stripping away from them every weapon and all their spiritual authority and power to accuse us. And by the power of the cross, Jesus led them around as prisoners in a procession of triumph. He was not their prisoner; they were his! Colossians 2:15 TPT

Notice that death has already been defeated but not yet destroyed. One day, when Christ calls us unto resurrection, we will be changed in the twinkling of an eye and receive our glorified bodies!

Until then he is destined to reign as King until all hostility has been subdued and placed under his feet. ²⁶ *And the*

last enemy to be subdued and eliminated is death itself.

1 Corinthians 15:25-26 TPT

And when that which is mortal puts on immortality, and what now decays is exchanged for what will never decay, then the Scripture will be fulfilled that says: Death is swallowed up by a triumphant victory!⁵⁵ So death, tell me, where is your victory? Tell me death, where is your sting?

1 Corinthians 15:54-55 TPT

Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? Romans 8:35 KJV

Not even death can separate us from His love! Are you hearing His voice so that you might live and never experience death?

Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. John 5:25 KJV

Yashuah declared the following to the Jewish traditional leaders, the Pharisees.

*I speak to you this eternal truth: **whoever cherishes my words and keeps them will never experience death.***

John 8:51 TPT

These leaders were so captive in their human customs and traditions that they simply could not understand the Messiah's speech.

This prompted the Jewish leaders to say, "Now we know for sure that you're demon possessed! You just said that those who keep watch over your words will never

experience death, but Abraham and all the prophets have died! ⁵³ Do you think you're greater than our father Abraham and all the prophets? You are so delusional about yourself that you make yourself greater than you are!
John 8:52-53 TPT

When we listen to the Messiah and obey His voice, we shall never see or taste death. There are no more claims on us. We are not going down into the kingdom of darkness but UPWARDS into the heavens. When Stephen, the first martyr, was stoned to death, he looked up and saw the heavens opened. Then he cried out his final words.

And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. ⁵⁷ Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, ⁵⁸ And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul. ⁵⁹ And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. Acts 7:56-59 KJV

Christ's resurrection means a birth from the dead. He emerged from the dead. When a baby is born, the head appears first. Jesus is the Head of the church.

Christ is the Head of his body, which is the church. And since he is the beginning and the firstborn heir in resurrection, he is the most exalted One, holding first place in everything. Colossians 1:18 TPT

Christ "*holding the first place*" implies that others will follow. We are the body that will follow Him in resurrection!

SEATED IN RULERSHIP

*From John to the seven churches in western Turkey: May the kindness of God's grace and peace overflow to you from him who is, and who was, and who is coming, and from the seven spirits who are in front of his throne, ⁵ and from Jesus Christ the **Faithful Witness**, the Firstborn from among the dead and the ruling King, who rules over the kings of the earth! Revelation 1:4-5 TPT*

John saw Yashuah, the Firstborn from the dead, and the 7 Spirits (Isaiah 11) in front of the throne. I believe these Spirits minister to us so we can make it to salvation! They are faithful witnesses who now rule over the earth.

Resurrection leads to the throne and rulership! Christ, the Firstborn of the resurrection harvest, is already sitting on the throne, from where He is ruling over the earth! We, as His body, will follow, as John confirms.

And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them. Revelation 20:4a KJV

You can trust these words: If we were joined with him in his death, then we are joined with him in his life! ¹² If we are joined with him in his sufferings, then we will reign together with him in his triumph. But if we disregard him, then he will also disregard us. ¹³ But even if we are faithless, he will still be full of faith, for he never wavers in his faithfulness to us! 2 Timothy 2:11-13 TPT

OVERCOMERS

To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. Revelation 3:21 KJV

BEING A WITNESS

Just before Yashuah ascended into heaven, He declared we would be His witnesses.

*But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my **witnesses** in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth.*

Acts 1:8 NIV

I only recently realised that, just as the apostles were witnesses of Yashuah's death, burial, and resurrection, we must be witnesses, too. When He ascended, the world could not see Him anymore but we, as believers, can still see Him.

Before long, the world will not see me anymore, but you will see me. Because I live, you also will live.

John 14:19 NIV

Acts 1 reveals a noteworthy aspect of the resurrection. Yashuah shared with His disciples the order in which different groups of people would be resurrected. What He said was, "Only the Father knows the times and seasons but let me tell you, before this can happen, I will return to the earth in the form of the Holy Ghost. Those to whom I return, will receive power to witness that I am alive! Now, you go and be witnesses that the

Messiah had come, that He died, was buried, and raised from the dead. This is the Gospel to be preached so those who hear and accept (do), will be resurrected, too."

*When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? ⁷ And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power. ⁸ But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be **witnesses** unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth. Acts 1:6-8 KJV*

To be effective witnesses, we need the infilling of the Holy Spirit. We need supernatural power to bear witness to this supernatural event. In our own power and knowledge, this would be impossible. This is why Jesus told His disciples to go back to Jerusalem and wait on the power that would be given to them by the infilling of the Ruach HaKodesh. Only then would they be witnesses for Him.

Yashuah adjusted their priorities. They would first need to be witnesses for Him before He would return for the restoration of Israel. This is why all believers must be witnesses of His resurrection. When the disciples chose a replacement for Judas Iscariot, they made sure to choose a believer who could also be a witness to His resurrection.

So then, we must choose his replacement from among those who have been with us from the very beginning, ²²from John's baptism until Jesus' ascension. And, like us, he must be a witness of his resurrection. Acts 1:21-22 TPT

After the Holy Ghost had filled the 120 men in the upper room in Jerusalem, they bore witness and testified of the Lord's resurrection.

The apostles gave powerful testimonies about the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and great measures of grace rested upon them all. Acts 4:33 TPT

Saints, we need to spread the message that Christ has risen from the dead! The church is preaching a contaminated message, leading many astray instead of witnessing to the resurrection of Yashuah.

Have you personally experienced the Messiah as your Risen Lord? Then you must be a witness for Him!

OUR HOPE

The Doctrine of Christ points us to the resurrection of the dead and eternal judgment. The moment we understand these two concepts, the veil will be lifted so we can understand that Christ is indeed coming back to take us where He is – His Father's house!

Because Paul believed in the resurrection of the dead, he was on trial in front of Felix (Acts 24:21). His hope was not in Felix, who had the power to free him from prison, but in God – the hope of a resurrection from the dead. Although Felix was able to put Paul's body to death, his hope was in his God who would one day resurrect him from the dead.

And my hope is in God, the same hope that even my accusers have embraced, the hope of a resurrection from the dead of both the righteous and the unrighteous. Acts 24:15 TPT

Paul quotes Jesus on the resurrection of the dead, both the righteous and the unrighteous.

*I speak to you eternal truth: **Soon the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who listen will arise with life!** ²⁶ For the Father has given the Son the power to impart life, even as the Father imparts life. ²⁷ The Father has transferred to the Son the authority to judge, because he is the Son of Man. ²⁸ "So don't be amazed when I tell you these things, for there is a day coming when all who have ever died will hear my voice calling them back to life, ²⁹ and they will come out of their graves! **Those who have done what is good will experience a resurrection to eternal life. And those who have practiced evil will taste the resurrection that brings them to condemnation!** John 5:25-29 TPT*

Referring to the righteous and the unrighteous was an indication that the righteous would be resurrected to eternal life but the unrighteous to eternal condemnation. Paul received a revelation that Christ had risen from the dead as the First Fruit of a great resurrection harvest and that each one (the righteous and the unrighteous) would be resurrected in his proper order!

But the truth is, Christ is risen from the dead, as the first fruit of a great resurrection harvest of those who have died. ²¹ For since death came through a man, Adam, it is fitting that the resurrection of the dead has also come through a man, Christ. ²² Even as all who are in Adam die, so also all who are in Christ will be made alive. ²³ But each one in his

proper order: Christ, the first fruits, then those who belong to Christ in his presence. 1 Corinthians 15:20-23 TPT

Jesus assured his disciples who were standing right in front of Him, that they would **come alive**, too.

Soon I will leave this world and they will see me no longer, but you will see me, because I will live again, and you will come alive too. John 14:19 TPT

This means, Saints, when His voice calls us on that day to be resurrected, some of us will still be alive.

Listen, and I will tell you a divine mystery: not all of us will die, but we will all be transformed.

1 Corinthians 15:51 TPT

Read 1 Corinthians 15 in the Passion Translation to understand that the first man (Adam) was from the dust of the earth and the Second Man (Lord Jehovah) is from the realm of Heaven. The first Adam has a race of earthly people just like him, and the One sent from heaven has a race of heavenly people just like Him.

There are earthly bodies and heavenly bodies. Flesh and blood cannot inherit God's Kingdom realm, and neither will that which is decaying inherit what is incorruptible.

Now, Paul says that not all of us will die but we will be changed and transformed. This will happen when we slip out of this perishable body into the imperishable, to receive new heavenly bodies able to inherit the Kingdom of God.

It will happen in an instant—in the twinkling of his eye. For when the last trumpet is sounded, the dead will come back

to life. We will be indestructible and we will be transformed. ⁵³ For we will discard our mortal "clothes" and slip into a body that is imperishable. What is mortal now will be exchanged for immortality. ⁵⁴ And when that which is mortal puts on immortality, and what now decays is exchanged for what will never decay.
1 Corinthians 15:52-54 TPT

THE DIFFERENT HARVESTS

During my search for the truth, I asked the Lord why there was so much confusion about the **rapture** of the church. God answered:

"There is a mystery revealed in the harvest!"

Scriptures reveal different harvests. Christ has risen as the First Fruit of a great resurrection harvest. This indicates a harvest to follow. "*But each one in his proper order*" means not all will be of the same harvest!

*But the truth is, Christ is risen from the dead, **as the first fruit of a great resurrection harvest of those who have died.** ²¹ For since death came through a man, Adam, it is fitting that the resurrection of the dead has also come through a man, Christ. ²² Even as all who are in Adam die, so also all who are in Christ will be made alive. ²³ But each one in his proper order: Christ, the first fruits, then those who belong to Christ in his presence.*
1 Corinthians 15:20-23 TPT

*But when it dies, God gives it a new form, a body to fulfill his purpose, and he sees to it that each **seed gets a new***

body of its own and becomes the plant he designed it to be. 1 Corinthians 15:38 TPT

Different seeds yield different harvests, as John wrote in Revelation.

The Harvest of the Earth

I looked and behold—I saw a white cloud, and sitting upon it was one like the Son of Man, wearing a golden crown and holding a sharp sickle. ¹⁵ Another angel came out of the temple, shouting out to the one sitting upon the cloud, "Take your sickle and reap, for the time of reaping the harvest has come and the harvest of the earth is ripe!" ¹⁶ So the one sitting upon the white cloud gave his sickle a mighty swing over the earth and reaped its harvest. ¹⁷ Then another angel came out of the heavenly temple, and he too had a sharp sickle. ¹⁸ And another angel came out from the altar of incense—the angel with authority over fire. He shouted out with a loud voice to the one who had the sharp sickle, saying, "Take now your sharp sickle and harvest the clusters of the vine of the earth, for its grapes are ripe." ¹⁹ So the angel gave his sickle a mighty swing over the earth and gathered the grapes from the vine of the earth and threw them into the great winepress of the wrath of God. ²⁰ And the winepress was trodden outside the city until blood poured out of the winepress as high as the horse's bridle for a distance of one thousand six hundred stadia. Revelation 14:14-20 TPT

From this passage, three different harvests can be identified according to the ancient Jewish tradition of harvests.

- The Barley Harvest.
- The Wheat Harvest.
- The Wine Harvest.

Barley is harvested by winnowing, which symbolises those people who have come into spiritual maturity before others. This group is the called-out ones, the Bride of Christ. They are being harvested under the correction of the Ruach HaKodesh.

Wheat, however, requires a more severe method of harvesting, predominantly because of the hardening of the chaff. In ancient Jewish tradition, wheat was harvested after the Barley Harvest. It was harvested by using a tribunal, where the word "tribulation" comes from. The wheat is part of the Body of Christ, but these people have not yet reached spiritual maturity. They will need further correction while going through the tribulation before being ready to be harvested.

The final harvest is the **Wine Harvest**, which indicates the Nation of Israel. A small remnant will survive the Great Tribulation, although they will be misled by the false messiah at first. Their eyes will eventually be opened to receive their true Messiah, Yashuah HaMashiach. They are the elect whom the angels will gather from the four winds of the earth.

And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.
Matthews 24:31 KJV

FOUNDATIONAL CONCEPTS TO BE UNDERSTOOD

- When we embrace Yashuah HaMashiach, we will experience life-giving light and never again walk in darkness (John 8:12).

- When we cherish His words and keep them in our hearts, we will never experience death (John 8:51).
- For those who embrace Him and cherish His words and keep them, Yashuah is preparing a place in His Father's house.
- He promises that He will come back to fetch us and that we will forever be with Him to rest.
- That day when He comes back to fetch us is the day His voice will call both the dead in Christ and those who remain alive on earth back to Him.
- Yashuah promises two resurrections. First, the resurrection of the dead in Christ, who will be resurrected unto eternal life. Second, those who have done evil and will be resurrected unto eternal damnation.
- Christ has been resurrected from the dead as the First Fruits of a resurrection harvest. Likewise, all will one day be resurrected, **but each one in its appropriate order.**
- The doctrine of resurrection points to different seeds that will bring forth different harvests.
- These harvests will be ready at different seasons and times.

ETERNAL JUDGMENT

JUDGMENT FOLLOWS RESURRECTION

According to Hebrews 6, eternal judgment will follow resurrection.

This Biblical truth gives further information to help unveil the mystery of the second coming of Christ Jesus, our Messiah.

It is a Biblical principle that God never judges the righteous together with the unrighteous. One example is that the angels could not destroy the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah before Lot and his family were removed.

'Hurry and take refuge there, for I cannot do anything [to punish Sodom] until you arrive there.' For this reason the town was named Zoar (few, small). Genesis 19:22 AMP

We can be assured of this Biblical principle because the Lord cannot and never will violate His Word. He will never break His promise to return for us and will never judge the righteous along with the unrighteous.

*God can't break his word. And because **his word cannot change**, the promise is likewise unchangeable.*
Hebrews 6:18 MSG

My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips. Psalm 89:34 KJV

If God were to violate His word, the whole universe would be destructed. This is powerful! Elohim upholds the universe by the word of His power!

...upholding all things by the word of his power...
Hebrews 1:3 KJV

Understanding the different resurrections and judgments will help us better understand the "snatching away" of the called-out ones.

The Likeness of His Resurrection

For since we are permanently grafted into him to experience a death like his, then we are permanently

*grafted into him to **experience a resurrection like his and the new life that it imparts.*** Romans 6:5 TPT

That I may know him and the power of his resurrection. Philippians 3:10 KJV

Christ's resurrection is your resurrection too.
Colossians 3:1 TPT

His resurrection is the resurrection of the called-out ones!

BLESSING OR PUNISHMENT

Since the beginning, God has been rewarding the righteous who obey Him. On the other hand, there has always been judgment or punishment for disobedience.

*Thou shalt have no other gods before me. ⁴ Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: ⁵ Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, **visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;** ⁶ And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.* Exodus 20:3-6 KJV

Throughout the Old Testament, we see Israel's disobedience. They constantly rebelled against Adonai and went astray into idolatry. Punishment for disobedience is repaid to the fourth generation, but for those who obey, the reward stretches unto a thousand generations.

You, the great God, the mighty one, show gracious love to thousands and repay the parents' iniquity to their children after them. The LORD of the Heavenly Armies is his name.
Jeremiah 32:18 ISV

But Lord, your endless love stretches from one eternity to the other, unbroken and unrelenting toward those who fear you and those who bow face down in awe before you. Your faithfulness to keep every gracious promise you've made passes from parents, to children, to grandchildren, and beyond. ¹⁸ You are faithful to all those who follow your ways and keep your word. Psalm 103:17-18 TPT

We are directly responsible for either the success or the punishment of our generations.

In the Book of Ezekiel, we see that souls belong to the Lord, but they are suffering because of the sin of their fathers.

The word of the LORD came unto me again, saying, ² What mean ye, that ye use this proverb concerning the land of Israel, saying, The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge? ³ As I live, saith the Lord GOD, ye shall not have occasion any more to use this proverb in Israel. ⁴ Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, it shall die. Ezekiel 18:1-4 KJV

If the clouds be full of rain, they empty themselves upon the earth: and if the tree fall toward the south, or toward

the north, in the place where the tree falleth, there it shall be. Ecclesiastes 11:3 KJV

The remark that the tree will remain where it falls indicates that the condition you are in when you die will determine your eternal condition.

PRINCIPLES

Romans gives five principles of God's judgment.

1. Judgment according to the truth.

*We know that God's judgment falls upon those who practice these things. **God is always right, because he has all the facts.*** Romans 2:2 TPT

In the case of Sodom and Gomorrah, God came down to see for Himself if the people were as bad as He had heard.

I am going down to see if their actions are as wicked as I have heard. If not, I want to know. Genesis 18:21 NLT

2. Judgment according to our deeds.

For: He will give to each one in return for what he has done. Romans 2:6 TPT

Each of our actions and thoughts has been noticed and recorded. John says that "books" will be opened on judgment day.

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which I the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. Revelation 20:12 KJV

3. Judgment will be fair.

There will be no partial judgment, but everything, even our thoughts, will be fully exposed. Adonai's judgment will not be unfair or based on favoritism.

...for God sees us all without partiality. Romans 2:11 TPT

4. Judgment will be according to the amount of light available to us.

When people who have never been exposed to the laws of Moses commit sin, they will still perish for what they do. And those who are under the law of Moses and fail to obey it are condemned by the law. Romans 2:12 TPT

Those who want to be teachers, will be subjected to more severe judgment!

Not many of you should become teachers, my fellow believers, because you know that we who teach will be judged more strictly. James 3:1 NIV

Yashuah said the people of Sodom and Gomorrah would be better off on judgment day than the religious leaders!

He said, "How tragic it will be for the city of Korazin! And how horrible for the city of Bethsaida! For if the powerful miracles that I performed in Korazin and Bethsaida had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have humbled themselves and repented, and turned from their sins. ²² Tyre and Sidon will be better off on judgment day than you! Matthew 11:21-22 TPT

The more light available, the stricter the judgment will be!

5. Judgment according to our secrets.

For the Word of God is alive and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart. Hebrews 4:12 NIV

So this judgment will be revealed on the day when God, through Jesus the Messiah, judges the hidden secrets of people's hearts. And their response to my gospel will be the standard of judgment used in that day. Romans 2:16 TPT

THE RIGHTEOUS JUDGE

One of Adonai's attributes is His righteousness. He is the Righteous Judge.

His work is perfect, For all His ways are just; A God of faithfulness and without injustice, Righteous and upright is He. Deuteronomy 32:4 NASB

What does it mean that God is just? It is more than Him simply being fair. It means He always does what is right and good toward all men. Likewise, although hard for many to accept, His sentencing of unrepentant sinners to hell is also right and good. A natural question that arises is how a just God can justify the unjust, since each of us is without Christ!

A.W. Tozer answers this relevant question by reminding us that the answer is in the Christian doctrine of justification and redemption. "Through the work of Christ in atonement, justice is not violated but satisfied when God spares a sinner. His mercy does not forbid Him to exercise His justice, nor does His justice forbid Him to exercise His mercy. He is both fully merciful and fully just."

"Considering God's goodness, mercy, love and grace, some might say God is too kind to punish the ungodly. But to believe this means we deny the reality of His infinite, unchanging justice. God will give justice for sin, either from Christ's atoning death or, for those who will not accept it, eternal wrath in hell."

"Let's assume all men are guilty of sin in the sight of God. From the mass of humanity, God sovereignly decides to give mercy to some of them. What do the rest get? They get justice. The saved get mercy and the unsaved get justice. Nobody gets injustice!"

We can rest assured!

His judgment will be fair and there will be no favouritism!

Patterns of Judgments

In the Gospels of Matthew and Luke, we find two patterns of judgment.

THE PARABLE OF THE MINAS

This parable is about a master who gave each of His servants a certain amount of minas, which was a small amount of money.

The Parable of a Prince and His Servants

At this time Jesus was getting close to entering Jerusalem. The crowds that followed him were convinced that God's kingdom would fully manifest when Jesus established it in Jerusalem. ¹² So he told them this story to change their perspective: 'Once a wealthy prince left his province to travel to a distant land, where he would be crowned king and then return. ¹³ Before he departed he summoned his ten servants together and charged them, 'I am entrusting each of you with fifty thousand dollars to invest while I am away. Trade with it and put the money to work until I return.' ¹⁴ "Some of his countrymen despised the prince and sent a delegation after him to declare before the royals, 'We refuse to let this man rule over us! He will not be our king!' ¹⁵ "Nevertheless, he was crowned king and returned to his land. Then he summoned his ten servants to see how much each one had earned and what their profits came to. ¹⁶ "The first one came forward and said, 'Master, I took what you gave me and invested it, and it multiplied ten times.' ¹⁷ 'Splendid! You have done well, my excellent servant. Because you have shown that I can trust

you in this small matter, I now grant you authority to rule over ten cities.' ¹⁸ "The second came and said, 'Master, what you left with me has multiplied five times.' ¹⁹ "His master said, 'I also grant you authority in my kingdom over five cities.' ²⁰ "Another came before the king and said, 'Master, here is the money you entrusted to me. I hid it for safekeeping. ²¹ You see, I live in fear of you, for everyone knows you are a strict master and impossible to please. You push us for a high return on all that you own, and you always want to gain from someone else's efforts.' ²² "The king said, 'You wicked servant! I will judge you using your own words. If what you said about me is true, that I am a harsh man, pushing you for a high return and wanting gain from others' efforts,²³ why didn't you at least put my money in the bank to earn some interest on it?' ²⁴ "The king said to his other servants, 'Take the money he has and give it to the faithful servant who multiplied my money ten times over.' ²⁵ " 'But master,' the other servants objected, 'why give it to him? He already has so much!' ²⁶ " 'Yes,' replied the king. 'But to all who have been faithful, I will give even more to them. And for the ones who have nothing, even the little they seem to have I will take from them. ²⁷ Now, bring all those rebellious enemies of mine who rejected me as their king—bring them here before me and execute them!' Luke 19:11-27 TPT

The faithful servants received yet more and the wicked lost everything. Faithful service while waiting for the Messiah's return will determine our position in eternity.

We must use what we have received, or we might lose it all!

By asking the wicked why he did not put his money in the bank to receive interest, the Lord indicates that each person needs to invest in a ministry.

**FIND A MINISTRY, CHECK IT OUT AND INVEST IN IT. YOU WILL RECEIVE
INTEREST WHEN HE RETURNS.**

THE PARABLE ABOUT STEWARDSHIP

An important Kingdom principle is to steward everything on earth well. Believers often desire to own a lot, but they do not steward what the Lord has already put in their hands.

In this parable, the Master left and entrusted his finances to His servants. Talents were distributed according to their ability. The Master expected them to multiply it. Later, when He returned, He called them to settle accounts. This means to execute judgment.

Again, heaven's kingdom is like a wealthy man who went on a long journey and summoned all his trusted servants and assigned his financial management over to them. ¹⁵ Before he left on his journey, he entrusted a bag of five thousand gold coins to one of his servants, to another a bag of two thousand gold coins, and to the third a bag of one thousand gold coins, each according to his ability to manage. ¹⁶ The one entrusted with five thousand gold coins immediately went out and traded with the money, and he doubled his investment. ¹⁷ In the same way, the one who was entrusted with two thousand gold

coins traded with the sum and likewise doubled his investment.¹⁸ But the one who had been entrusted with one thousand gold coins dug a hole in the ground and buried his master's money.¹⁹ "After much time had passed, the master returned to settle accounts with his servants.²⁰ The one who was entrusted with five thousand gold coins came and brought ten thousand, saying, 'See, I have doubled your money.'²¹ Commending his servant, the master replied, 'You have done well, and proven yourself to be my loyal and trustworthy servant. Because you have been a faithful steward to manage a small sum, now I will put you in charge of much, much more. You will experience the delight of your master, who will say to you, "Enter into the joy of your Lord!"'²² Then the one who had been entrusted with two thousand gold coins came in and said, 'See, my master, I have doubled what you have entrusted to me.'²³ Commending his servant, the master replied, 'You have done well, and proven yourself to be my loyal and trustworthy servant. Because you were faithful to manage a small sum, now I will put you in charge of much, much more. You will experience the delight of your master, who will say to you, "Enter into the joy of your Lord!"'²⁴ Then the one who had been entrusted with one thousand gold coins came to his master and said, 'Look, sir. I know that you are a hard man to please and you're a shrewd and ruthless businessman who grows rich on the backs of others.²⁵ I was afraid of you, so I went and hid your money and buried it in the ground. But here it is—take it, it's yours.'²⁶ "But his master said to him, 'You're

an untrustworthy and lazy servant! If you knew I was a shrewd and ruthless business man who always makes a profit, why didn't you deposit my money in the bank? ²⁷ Then I would have received it all back with interest when I returned. ²⁸ But because you were unfaithful, I will take the one thousand gold coins and give them to the one who has ten thousand. ²⁹ For the one who has will be given more, until he overflows with abundance. And the one with hardly anything, even what little he has will be taken from him. ³⁰ Then the master said to his other servants, 'Now, throw that good-for-nothing servant far away from me into the outer darkness, where there will be great misery and anguish!' Matthew 25:14-30 TPT

Notice that the rewards were not according to the amount each servant had received but to the percentage of the profit made. The return on investment for all of them was the same but one of them did absolutely nothing to multiply what he had received. The Master dealt with his laziness more severely than with drunkenness. Churches often tolerate laziness! If you cannot multiply what the Lord has given in your hands for His Kingdom, then at least put it into a ministry, for you will receive interest on your investment. The reward for the servant's laziness was severe! He was thrown into the outer darkness, where there would be great misery and anguish – weeping and gnashing of teeth!

SUMMARY

- The service we offer determines our position in the next life.
- If we do not use our talent, we will lose it.
- If we don't do good at every opportunity, we commit sin (James 4:17).

Matthew 5 shows three groups of people unacceable to God.

- The five foolish virgins, who did not have sufficient oil.
- The servant, who did not multiply his one talent.
- The goat nations, that did not offer help to the needy.

What do these groups have in common? **They were lazy!**

Judgments

For this discussion, we will distinguish between **seven** different judgments.

- **Judgment of the believer.** This is the Bema Seat Judgment.
- **Judgment of the world.** This will happen when Christ returns to earth with His Bride to execute judgment. This will involve the following judgments:
 - a. Judgment of **Israel**.
 - b. Judgment of **Satan** and his demons.
 - c. Judgment of the **False Prophet and the Antichrist**.
 - d. Judgment of the **Nations** of the Earth.
- **The White Throne Judgment.** This will take place at the end of the Millennium Reign.

The Bema Seat

Paul condemned judgment of each other. Only God can judge, and He will judge ALL. This means every person will be judged by God!

But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. ¹¹ For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. ¹² So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God. Romans 14:10-12 KJV

I said to myself, 'God will bring into judgment both the righteous and the wicked, for there will be a time for every activity, a time to judge every deed.' Ecclesiastes 3:17 NIV

But the Scriptures are clear that the righteous and unrighteous will never be judged simultaneously.

Far be it from you to do such a thing--to kill the righteous with the wicked, treating the righteous and the wicked alike. Far be it from you! Will not the Judge of all the earth do right? Genesis 18:25 NIV

We see that the righteous will be resurrected first, and later the unrighteous. We also know now that judgment will follow each resurrection.

The righteous will indeed one day appear before the judgment seat of Christ. This judgment seat is the "**Bema Seat**" in Greek.

*For we must all appear before the **judgment seat** {G968 - Bema} of Christ; that everyone **may receive the things***

done in his body, according to that he hath done,
whether it be good or bad. 2 Corinthians 5:10 KJV

G968 (Strong's)

βῆμα

bema

bay'-ma

From the base of G939; a *step*, that is, *foot breadth*; by implication, *rostrum*, that is, *tribunal*: judgment-seat, set [foot] on, throne.

The Bema Seat is a platform of reward and not of judgment or punishment. Those who died in Christ (per implication also those who would still be alive in Christ, those permanently grafted into Him) will be resurrected first unto eternal life. Immediately thereafter judgment will follow. This judgment is the Bema Seat Judgment, when all the righteous will receive their rewards. 2 Corinthians 5:10 is clear that we will be recompensed for our actions, whether good or bad. The Bema Seat is not a platform for giving an account of our sins.

*There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are
in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the
Spirit.* Romans 8:1 KJV

There will be no condemnation for those walking after the Spirit, which implies that those walking after the flesh will be condemned. This refers to the unrighteous. As we shall see later, they will appear before the White Throne Judgment Seat after the 1000-year Millennium Reign.

"*Bema*" refers to a platform on which a judge or governor gives judgment or rewards. It is a place of evaluation and designation. In ancient times, athletes were judged according to their obedience to the rules of the specific game they had competed in. The victors were led to

the platform (Bema) where the judge rewarded them. Paul pictures believers before the Bema as competitors receiving the victor's crown.

A true athlete will be disciplined in every respect, practicing constant self-control in order to win a laurel wreath that quickly withers. But we run our race to win a victor's crown that will last forever. 1 Corinthians 9:25 TPT

Losers will not be condemned at the Bema Seat, but victors will be rewarded and recompensed! We will not stand hunched to be whipped, but upright to receive our rewards, whether we did good or bad.

For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, so that each of us may receive what is due us for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad.
2 Corinthians 5:10 NIV

"Recompense" means:

- To indemnify, repay, reimburse, pay money to, make reparation to, make restitution to, make amends to.
- *"She wanted to recompense him."* Meaning to reward, pay, pay back; *archaic* guerdon.
- *"She still hasn't received much to recompense her loss."* Meaning to make up for, compensate for, make amends for, make restitution for, make reparation for, redress, make good, satisfy.

Also, we see that the Bema Judgment will happen in front of the throne.

*For one day we will all be **openly revealed before Christ on his throne** so that each of us will be **duly recompensed for our actions done in life**, whether good or worthless.* 2 Corinthians 5:10 TPT

When we come unto salvation, we come under the Blood of the Lamb who paid the debt for our sins. Once true repentance has taken place, the Messiah will never deal with our sins again.

WE WILL STAND BEFORE THE BEMA

When we appear before the Bema, we will be standing. The word “**stand**” in Greek is “*apistemi*”, and it means to stand, not crawl or grovel. There will be no shame! We belong to Christ and are washed by His Blood. In Greek, the word “judgment” does not even appear in this context. It refers to the “bema” - the platform of **reward**.

EVALUATION

The Bema is a place of evaluation. Christ designates what we do in obedience according to His plan. Each person will give their own account.

Therefore, each one must answer for himself and give a personal account of his own life before God.

Romans 14:12 TPT

Do we truly compete according to the rules? The Bema Seat will evaluate what kind of reward each will receive.

For one day we will all be openly revealed before Christ on his throne so that each of us will be duly recompensed for our actions done in life, whether good or worthless.

2 Corinthians 5:10 TPT

REVEALED BY FIRE

God has given me unique gifts as a skilled master builder who lays a good foundation. Afterward another craftsman comes and builds on it. So, builders beware! Let every builder do his work carefully, according to God's standards. ¹¹ For no one is empowered to lay an alternative foundation other than the good foundation that exists, which is Jesus Christ! ¹²⁻¹³ The quality of materials used by anyone building on this foundation will soon be made apparent, whether it has been built with gold, silver, and costly stones, or wood, hay, and straw. Their work will soon become evident, for the day will make it clear, because it will be revealed by blazing fire! And the fire will test and prove the workmanship of each builder.

1 Corinthians 3:10-13 TPT

2 Corinthians 5:10 says we will be recompensed for our works, whether "**good or bad**". But how can we be rewarded for something bad?

I believe I have the answer! When we appear before the Bema, it would mean we have made it unto heaven, and we will be waiting to receive, not standing to give account. Paul says our works will be evaluated by a furnace of fire to be tested and to prove our workmanship.

If his work stands the test of fire, he will be rewarded. ¹⁵ If his work is consumed by the fire, he will suffer great loss. Yet he himself will barely escape destruction, like one being rescued out of a burning house. 1 Corinthians 3:14-15 TPT

I strongly believe these verses give us the answer. When you have done nothing good, your works will go up in flames, but you will be saved as if rescued from a burning fire.

WE MUST GIVE AN ACCOUNT

When the Master gave His servants talents, He came back and called them to give an account. The Greek word for “**reckon**” is “**logidzomai**”, which refers to a bookkeeping term that means to compare accounts. It pictures an accountant who puts together a profit and loss statement - a thorough examination of books to determine the real financial status of the corporation. This tells us how He will deal with us when we stand before Him at the Bema Seat.

PASSING THE TEST

Before we can participate in the first resurrection, we must pass the test. I am in sorrow for the Body of Christ because many believe we need a born-again experience only. But a born-again experience is only the starting point of a new life in Christ Jesus. Jesus explained to Nicodemus that a born-again experience is for us to **see** the Kingdom of God. Then we need to be baptised into Christ. When we come out of the water, we **enter** the Kingdom of God. Then we must move through cleansing and purification to become whole and holy to **inherit** the Kingdom of God.

Many Christians are still captive in sexual immorality, drunkenness or hatred toward a brother or sister in Christ. Such people will **not** inherit the Kingdom of God.

Anyone who hates a brother or sister is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life residing in him. 1 John 3:15 NIV

*Know ye not that the **unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God?** Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind: ¹⁰ Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.* 1 Corinthians 6:9-10 KJV

*For you may be sure of this, that everyone who is **sexually immoral** or impure, or who is covetous (that is, an idolater), has no inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God.* Ephesians 5:5 ESV

But outside are the dogs and the sorcerers and the fornicators and the murderers and the idolaters and whosoever loves and makes a lie.
Revelation 22:15 JUB

We are now completely convinced that the righteous will inherit the Kingdom. But how does the righteous qualify for inheriting the Kingdom?

*We feel a personal responsibility to continually be thanking God for you, our spiritual family, every time we pray. And we have every reason to do so because **your faith is growing** marvelously beyond measure. **The unselfish love each of you share for one another is increasing and overflowing!** ⁴ We point to you as an example **of unwavering faith** for all the churches of God. We boast about how you continue to **demonstrate unflinching***

endurance through all the persecutions and painful trials you are experiencing. 2 Thessalonians 1:3-4 TPT

A “mishphoca” is an “entire family network of relatives by blood or marriage, and sometimes close friends.” Are you part of such of a spiritual family? Or do you isolate yourself and constantly criticise the Body of Christ?

Is your faith and unselfish love for others growing beyond measure? Or are you walking in conflict with the people around you?

Do you demonstrate unflinching endurance when going through persecutions and painful trials, meaning that you do not show fear or hesitation in the face of dangers or difficulty? Or are you constantly complaining about difficult situations?

If you truly can say “**Yes**” to the positive side of all the questions above, you will be worthy of inheriting the Kingdom of God!

All of this prove that God’s judgment is always perfect and is intended to make you worthy of inheriting the kingdom of God, which is why you are going through these troubles. 2 Thessalonians 1:5 TPT

All trials and persecutions are tests for every believer to overcome, not only to be set apart from the rest but to receive the qualification to participate in the first resurrection. When we endure to the end, we will receive the **victor’s crown**, which is the reward waiting for us in the heavens! **It is crucial to pass the test!**

My fellow believers, when it seems as though you are facing nothing but difficulties, see it as an invaluable opportunity to experience the greatest joy that you can!

³ For you know that when **your faith is tested** it stirs up power within you to endure all things. ⁴ And then as your endurance grows even stronger it will release perfection into every part of your being until there is nothing missing and nothing lacking. James 1:2-4 TPT

If your faith remains strong, even while surrounded by life's difficulties, you will continue to experience the untold blessings of God! True happiness comes as you pass the test with faith and receive the **victorious crown** of life promised to every lover of God! James 1:12 TPT

Isn't it obvious that all runners on the racetrack keep on running to win, but only one receives the **victor's prize**? Yet each one of you must run the race to be victorious. ²⁵ A true athlete will be disciplined in every respect, practicing constant self-control in order to win a laurel wreath that quickly withers. But we run our race to win a victor's crown that will last forever. ²⁶ For that reason, I don't run just for exercise or box like one throwing aimless punches, ²⁷ but I train like a champion athlete. I subdue my body and get it under my control, so that after preaching the good news to others I myself won't be **disqualified**. 1 Corinthians 9:24-27 TPT

Both Paul and James point us to the **victor's prize** – a crown waiting for us in heaven if we endure to the end! We must remain faithful and pass every test. Paul was very concerned that he might be disqualified. He was not concerned about losing his salvation but about being

disqualified from receiving a crown as a reward. He encourages us to learn from Israel's failures.

*My dear fellow believers, you need to understand that all of our Jewish ancestors who walked through a wilderness long ago were under the glory cloud and passed through the waters of the sea on both sides. ² They were all baptized into the cloud of glory, into the fellowship of Moses, and into the sea. ³ They all ate the same heavenly manna ⁴ and drank water from the same spiritual rock that traveled with them—and that Rock was Christ himself. ⁵ Yet God was not pleased with most of them, and their dead bodies were scattered around the wilderness. ⁶ Now, all these things serve as types and pictures for us—lessons that teach us not to fail in the same way by callously craving worthless things ⁷ and practicing idolatry, as some of them did. For it is written: The people settled into their unrestrained revelry, with feasting and drinking, then they rose up and became wildly out of control! ⁸ Neither should we commit sexual immorality, as some of them did, which caused the death of twenty-three thousand on a single day. ⁹ Nor should we ever provoke the Lord, as some of them did by putting him to outrageous tests that resulted in their death from snakebites day after day. ¹⁰ And we must not embrace their ways by complaining—grumbling with discontent, as many of them did, and were killed by the destroyer! ¹¹ **All the tests they endured on their way through the wilderness are a symbolic picture, an example that provides us with a warning so that we can learn through what they***

experienced. For we live in a time when the purpose of all the ages past is now completing its goal within us. ¹² So beware if you think it could never happen to you, lest your pride becomes your downfall.
1 Corinthians 10:1-12 TPT

Jude also warns us.

I need to remind you, even though you are familiar with it all, that the Lord Jesus saved his people out of Egypt but subsequently destroyed those who were guilty of unbelief. ⁶In the same way, there were heavenly messengers in rebellion who went outside their rightful domain of authority and abandoned their appointed realms. God bound them in everlasting chains and is keeping them in the dark abyss of the netherworld until the judgment of the great day. ⁷In a similar way, the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah and nearby towns gave themselves to sexual immorality and the unnatural desire of different flesh. Now they all serve as examples of those who experience the punishment of eternal fire. Jude 1:5-7 TPT

These people insult anything they don't understand. They behave like irrational beasts by doing whatever they feel like doing. Because they live by their animal instincts, they corrupt themselves and bring about their own destruction. ¹¹How terrible it is for them! For they have followed in the steps of Cain. They have abandoned themselves to Balaam's error because of their greedy pursuit of financial gain. And since they have rebelled like Korah rebelled, they

will experience the same fate of Korah and likewise perish.

Jude 1:10-11 TPT

Let us learn from the story of Korah.

Numbers 16:1-41 tells that Korah rebelled against Moses, along with 249 co-conspirators. They were punished for their rebellion by God sending fire from heaven to consume all 250 of them. Korah's Reubenite accomplices, Dathan and Abiram, were also punished. God caused the ground to split open beneath their feet, swallowing them, their families, anyone associated with Korah, and all their possessions. The Israelites objected to Moses about what had happened to Korah, Dathan, Abiram, and their families. God then commanded Moses to depart from the multitude and He smote 14 700 men with a plague as punishment (Numbers 16:41).

Read Hebrews 3 and 4, to see how the Israelites serve as an example for us. They did not enter their Promised Land because of unbelief, rebellion, and hardening of their hearts.

COUNTED WORTHY

We should pray to be counted worthy. Part of the test is to wait patiently for the soon return of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Meanwhile, brothers and sisters, we must be patient and filled with expectation as we wait for the appearing of the Lord. Think about the farmer who has to patiently wait for the earth's harvest as it ripens because of the early and latter rains. ⁸ So you also keep your hopes high and be

patient, for the presence of the Lord is drawing closer.

James 5:7-8 TPT

The Sadducees were a religious group that denied the resurrection of the dead. They asked Jesus about a wife who had seven husbands, all of whom had died. They wanted to know to whom she would be married in heaven. Jesus explained that those who are worthy of the resurrection from the dead will become immortal, just like the angels in heaven.

Jesus replied, "Marriage is for the sons of this world only. ³⁵⁻³⁶ But those who are worthy of the resurrection from the dead into glory become immortal, like the angels, who never die nor marry. When the dead come to life again, they will be sons of God's life—the sons of the resurrection."³⁷ In fact, it was Moses who taught the resurrection of the dead when he wrote of the Lord God who was at the burning bush and described him as 'the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.'³⁸ Don't you agree that God is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living? For in his eyes, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob are alive forevermore. He must be the God who raises the dead.

Luke 20:34-38 TPT

According to 2 Thessalonians 1, we are worthy of inheriting the Kingdom of God when we persevere and endure to the very end. Combining the words of Jesus with this principle of Paul, we can indeed believe that there remains a rest and a victorious crown for us! This heavenly crown awaits those whose faith grows marvellously beyond measure, who share an unselfish love for one another, stand with unwavering faith, and demonstrate unflinching endurance throughout all persecutions and painful trials. We must realise that our faith is being tested and we

should choose to remain strong, even while surrounded by life's difficulties. Expect to receive the victor's crown! Run the race victoriously to win a victor's crown that will last forever!

Those who never give in, whose hearts never grow cold and who never reject the love of the truth, will be worthy of the resurrection of the dead!

Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man (at the Bema Seat Judgment). Luke 21:36 KJV

*Be careful that you never allow your hearts to grow cold. Remain passionate and free from anxiety and the worries of this life. Then you will not be caught off guard by what happens. Don't let me come and find you drunk or careless in living like everyone else. ³⁵ For that day will come as a shocking surprise to all, like a downpour that drenches everyone, catching many unaware and unprepared. ³⁶ **Keep a constant watch over your soul,** and pray for the courage and grace to prevail over these things that are destined to occur and that you will stand before the presence of the Son of Man with a clear conscience. Luke 21:34-36 TPT*

PURIFICATION

Resurrection is about our transformation. We will be changed from mortal to immortal when we slip out of our earthly bodies to receive our new glorified bodies.

*Dear friends, we are now God's children, **but what we will be like has not been revealed yet.** We know that when the Messiah is revealed, **we will be like him,** because we will see him as he is. 1 John 3:2 ISV*

Paul says not all of us will die, **but all will be transformed** (1 Corinthians 15:51). John says it is not yet revealed what we will be like when we change, but one thing is clear – we will be like the Messiah (1 John 3:2). This is an amazing realisation!

It will happen in an instant—in the twinkling of his eye. For when the last trumpet is sounded, the dead will come back to life. We will be indestructible and we will be transformed.⁵³ For we will discard our mortal “clothes” and slip into a body that is imperishable. What is mortal now will be exchanged for immortality.⁵⁴ And when that which is mortal puts on immortality, and what now decays is exchanged for what will never decay, then the scripture will be fulfilled that says: Death is swallowed up by a triumphant victory!⁵⁵ So death, tell me, where is your victory? Tell me death, where is your sting?
1 Corinthians 15:52-55 TPT

We will overcome the last enemy, which is death! We will be like Jesus in the twinkling of an eye! We will also receive our glorified bodies when we meet Him in the air.

*And all who focus their hope on him will always be
purifying themselves, just as Jesus is pure.*

1 John 3:3 TPT

Throughout the Bible, God commands that we need to be **pure**, for He is pure.

*...let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and
spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.*

2 Corinthians 7:1 KJV

Jesus gave Himself for us that we might be redeemed from all iniquity, and to **purify** unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works (Titus 2:14).

From the above scriptures, the righteous will appear before the throne in heaven for the Bema Seat Judgment. It will be a platform of reward and not of condemnation. The righteous will receive their reward, whether good or bad.

Before studying the other four judgments, it may be worthwhile to mention the different rewards we will receive at the Bema Seat. Let us rejoice in the following knowledge!

Our Rewards

According to the Scriptures, there are five crowns of reward.

THE INCORRUPTIBLE CROWN

And everyone who strives for the mastery is temperate in all things. Then those truly that they may receive a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.
1 Corinthians 9:25 MKJV

THE CROWN OF REJOICING

For what is our hope or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are you not even to be in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming? 1 Thessalonians 2:19 MKJV

THE CROWN OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

Now there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that Day; and not to me only, but also to all those who love His appearing. 2 Timothy 4:8 MKJV

THE CROWN OF GLORY

Feed the flock of God among you, taking the oversight, not by compulsion, but willingly; ³ nor for base gain, but readily; nor as lording it over those allotted to you by God, but becoming examples to the flock. ⁴ And when the Chief Shepherd shall appear, you shall receive a never-fading crown of glory. 1 Peter 5:2-4 MKJV

THE CROWN OF LIFE

Blessed is the man who endures temptation, because having been approved, he will receive the crown of life which the Lord has promised to those who love Him.
James 1:12 MKJV

Do not at all fear what you are about to suffer. Behold, the devil will cast some of you into prison, so that you may be tried. And you will have tribulation ten days. Be faithful to death, and I will give you the crown of life.

Revelation 2:10 MKJV

The remaining question for the believer is WHEN the Bema Seat Judgment will happen. Let us study the different judgments to discover when each judgment will take place.

Judgment of the Earth

Enoch, the seventh descendant from Adam, already saw the judgment of the unrighteous. His vision confirms that the righteous will be before the throne in heaven, in front of the Bema Seat Judgment to receive their rewards.

Jude indicates judgment of the ungodly deeds on earth.

Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,** ¹⁵ **To execute judgment upon all and to convict each one of them for their ungodly deeds and for all the terrible words that ungodly sinners have spoken against him. Jude:14b-15 KJV

The following information will bring more clarity.

John saw thrones, and those who sat on them were given judgment (Revelation 20:4). This is the **Barley Harvest**, which will be part of the “**snatching away**”. Those who will be alive during the resurrection of the dead will be caught up in the clouds to meet the Messiah for the marriage ceremony.

John also saw the souls of those who were beheaded because they witnessed of Jesus. They are part of the **Wheat Harvest**. They had not worshiped the Beast nor his image, neither had they received his mark upon their foreheads or in their hands and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

Both groups will be part of the thousands of saints descending with Christ to rule and reign during the Millennium.

Listen to what Jude says about the people who will be judged.

These people are always complaining and never satisfied—finding fault with everyone. They follow their own evil desires and their mouths speak scandalous things. They enjoy using seductive flattery to manipulate others. Jude 1:16 TPT

JUDGMENT OF ISRAEL

Sometimes we forget that we, as Gentiles, have the privilege to make it unto salvation because of the temporary blindness of Israel.

*So, am I saying that Israel stumbled so badly that they will never get back up? **Certainly not! Rather, it was because of their stumble that salvation now extends to all the non-Jewish people, in order to make Israel jealous and desire the very things that God has freely given them.*** ¹² *So if all the world is being greatly enriched through their failure, and through their fall great spiritual wealth is given to the non-Jewish people, imagine how much more will Israel's awakening bring to us all!*

¹³ Now, I speak to you who are not Jewish, since I am an apostle to reach the non-Jewish people. And I draw attention to this ministry as much as I can when I am among the Jews, ¹⁴ hoping to make them jealous of what God has given to those who are not Jews, winning some of my people to salvation. ¹⁵ For if their temporary rejection released the reconciling power of grace into the world, what will happen when Israel is reinstated and reconciled to God? It will unleash resurrection power throughout the whole earth! Romans 11:11-15 TPT

This is a major revelation! The temporary rejection of Israel released the reconciling power of grace into the world. This reconciling power is a Gentile harvest. Billions of souls have come in since the death of Christ. When Israel is reinstated into the original olive tree, their reconciliation with Christ will unleash resurrection power all over the earth.

*My beloved brothers and sisters, I want to share with you a mystery concerning Israel's future. For understanding this mystery will keep you from thinking you already know everything. **A partial and temporary hardening to the gospel has come over Israel, which will last until the full number of non-Jews has come into God's family.***

²⁶ And then God will bring all of Israel to salvation! The prophecy will be fulfilled that says: "Coming from Zion will be the Savior, and he will turn Jacob away from evil. ²⁷ For this is my covenant promise with them when I forgive their sins." ²⁸ Now, many of the Jews are opposed to the gospel, but their opposition has opened the door of the gospel to

you who are not Jewish. Yet they are still greatly loved by God because their ancestors were divinely chosen to be his. ²⁹And when God chooses someone and graciously imparts gifts to him, they are never rescinded.
Romans 11:25-29 TPT

Saints, this is the purpose of the Tribulation. The seven-year Tribulation is Jacob's trouble. In the fullness of time, when the full number of non-Jews has made it into God's family, Adonai will again turn to Israel and give them His full attention and bring them home. For those who are against Israel as a nation, let this be a warning! God will deal severely with those who turn against Israel.

Israel is refined for God's glory and God is saving them for His sake because He made a covenant with Abraham.

For mine own sake, even for mine own sake, will I do it. Isaiah 48:11a KJV

There are two entities with two different purposes involved in God's promise to Abraham, namely Israel (*sand*) and Gentiles (*stars*). Adonai has a plan for the Gentiles to make it unto salvation and He will deal specially with Israel to bring them in, too.

BLESSING AND JUDGMENT

Yehôvâh Elohim blessed Israel directly so they could be a blessing to the Gentiles.

*Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship:
for salvation is of the Jews.* John 4:22 KJV

But when judgment comes, Adonai will judge the Gentiles directly and He will judge Israel through the Gentiles. Jude quoted Enoch when he said that the Lord would come with ten thousand of His saints to execute judgment upon all and to convict each one of them of their ungodly deeds and for all the terrible words the ungodly sinners have spoken against Him (Jude 1:14-15).

'Indeed, the time will come,' declares the LORD, 'when I'll restore the security of my people Israel and Judah,' says the LORD. 'I'll bring them back to the land that I gave to their ancestors, and they'll possess it.'" ⁴ *These are the words that the LORD spoke about Israel and Judah:* ⁵ *"Indeed, this is what the LORD says: 'We have heard a sound of terror and of fear, and there is no peace. "* ⁶ *Ask about this and think about it—Can a man give birth to a child? Why then do I see every strong man with his hands on his thighs like a woman giving birth, and all their faces have turned pale? "* ⁷ *Oh how terrible! That time will be worse than any like it. It will be a time of trouble for Jacob, but he will be rescued from it. Jeremiah 30:3-7 ISV*

Jeremiah foresaw the Tribulation and prophesied that Adonai would rescue them from it. We see here that the judgment of Israel will take place at the end of the seven-year Tribulation, as Jesus explained to four of His disciples on the Mount of Olives in a private meeting.

At the end of the Tribulation the Son of Man will appear. (Matthew 24:29-30)

SATAN BOUND FOR A THOUSAND YEARS

Revelation 20 gives information about the judgment of the earth. Remember, at that stage Satan would have been thrown down onto the earth.

And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. Revelation 12:13 KJV

And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. Revelation 20:1-2 JUB

But the rest of the dead (referring to the unrighteous) lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. ⁶Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the FIRST resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. Revelation 20:5-6 KJV

After the thousand years, Satan will be released to deceive the nations again. That will be the final Gog and Magog battle where he will finally be destroyed, after which he will be thrown into the lake of fire for eternity.

THE ANTICHRIST AND THE FALSE PROPHET

After the seven-year tribulation, the antichrist and the false prophet will also be taken directly into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:10).

SHEEP AND GOATS

Immediately after the Tribulation, the Son of Man will appear in the heavens. During the private meeting on the Mount of Olives, Jesus explained what the signs for the coming of the Son of Man would be.

*Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: ³⁰ And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. ³¹ **And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.** Matthew 24:29-31 KJV*

The angels will gather His elect, Israel, from the four winds and He shall separate the nations as a shepherd would divide sheep from the goats. The goats (the unrighteous) will go directly into the lake of fire.

And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: ³³ And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. ³⁴ Then shall the

King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. Matthew 25:32-34 KJV

THE IMPORTANCE OF SERVING EACH OTHER

Serving our brothers and sisters will greatly determine whether we will be sheep or goats.

Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: ⁴² *For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: ⁴³ I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. ⁴⁴ Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? ⁴⁵ Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me: ⁴⁶ And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal. Matthew 25:41-46 KJV*

To the sheep on his right, Jesus said:

*Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, **inherit the kingdom** prepared for you from the foundation of the world. Matthew 25:34 KJV*

THE LORD WILL JUDGE THE NATIONS

Look, now! In those very days and at that time, when I restore prosperity to Judah and Jerusalem² I will gather all nations, bringing them down to the Valley of Jehoshaphat. I will set out my case against them there, on behalf of my people, my heritage Israel, whom they scattered among the nations, apportioning my land among themselves. Joel 3:1-2 ISV

There comes a final day when the Lord will deal with the nations of the world. May the Lord have mercy on those who divided the land of Israel or oppressed the Jewish people. There will be weeping and a gnashing of teeth!

The Great White Throne

There remains another resurrection and final judgment at the end of the thousand-year reign. This is what Revelation refers to as the Great White Throne Judgment.

*And I saw a **great white throne**, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them¹² And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which **is the book of life**: and the **dead were judged** out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works:¹³ And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and*

they were judged every man according to their works:

¹⁴ ***And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire.***

This is the second death. ¹⁵ *And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire. Revelation 20:11-15 KJV*

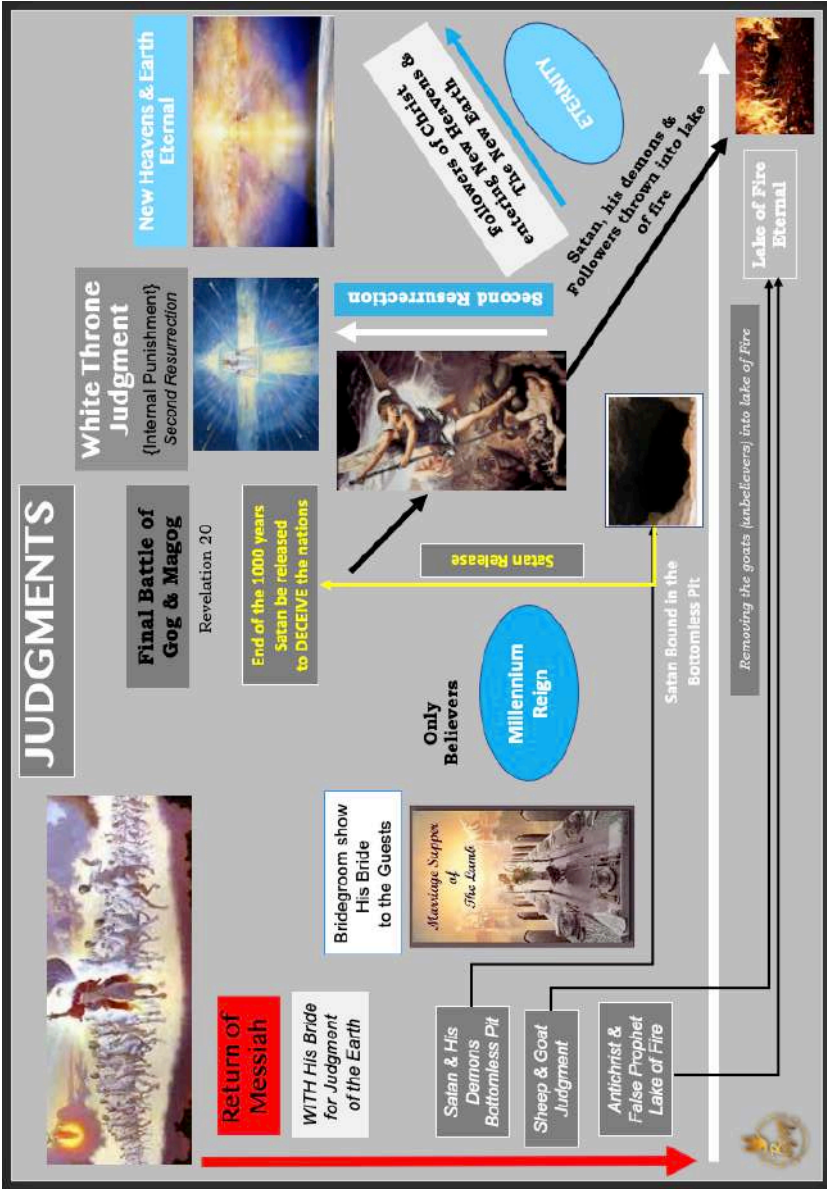
The purpose of the White Throne Judgment is to judge the dead. These are the unrighteous. They are those who have never received the Messiah as their Saviour. It also refers to the second death which implies that this is a second resurrection. It confirms what John wrote in the same chapter.

But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. *This is the first resurrection: ⁶ Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. Revelation 20:5-6 KJV*

This judgment takes place at the end of the Millennium Reign. The White Throne Judgment is for the unrighteous. That Revelation 20:14 mentions this as the second death, means this judgment is the final judgment for the wicked and they are all destined for the lake of fire.

Blessed and holy are those who participate in the first resurrection!

Those who are worthy of the first resurrection will not be influenced by the second death. The second death will have no power over them. They have already overcome the last enemy! "*Death, where is your sting?*"



Let us pause for a moment to recap and remind ourselves of the following.

A new Race

The Good News, preached by the apostles and recorded in the New Testament, is the message of the Messiah who was crucified, buried, and resurrected. These actions paid in full the price for the human race which was born in sin because of Adam and Eve's disobedience in the Garden of Eden.

Because of disobedience, all of humanity is born from the dust, with a sinful nature. The first Adam is the father of a race just like him!

Christ, the Second Adam, was born from an incorruptible seed, from a virgin, and He never saw decay. He was the first to be born from above. This explains why we need to be born again if we want to share in His likeness. If we are not born again from an incorruptible seed, we will stay in our old sinful nature which is in the likeness of Adam.

As the first Adam has a race like him, likewise, the Second Adam, Yashuah HaMashiach. This race is born from above and is permanently grafted into Christ. Scriptures are clear that you are born from above only after you have come out of water and have been baptised in the Holy Spirit. **This is very important to understand because we need to distinguish between the different groups of people the Bible talks about.**

Many scriptures are meant for the wicked and unsaved. When the righteous interpret these scriptures as if written for them, they may condemn themselves. Similarly, if scriptures that are exclusively written

for Israel are being interpreted as if they are meant for the called-out ones, we may end up being deceived and confused.

Raised from the Dead

Our true Messiah was raised from the dead. If we are permanently grafted into Christ, we will share in His resurrection. Christ's resurrection is our resurrection, too (Colossians 3:1).

We need to understand the harvest pattern that the ancient Jewish people followed in the Old Testament. The principle of the first fruits is that the rest of the harvest is redeemed. This is profound, and we must understand this concept to fully embrace the "snatching away" of the called-out ones. Christ is the First Fruits of the resurrection harvest. Those who are permanently grafted into Him will also be resurrected but each according to its own order (1 Corinthians 15:23). This confirms there is indeed more than one harvest. John mentioned these different harvests in Revelation 14. Let us have a look at these again.

- The Barley Harvest, by winnowing.
- The Wheat Harvest, by a tribunal.
- The Wine Harvest, by the wine press.

Scriptures on the harvests are meant for the righteous - those who will eventually be harvested, each according to its own order. The **Barley Harvest** is those in early spiritual maturity who will be snatched away before the Tribulation. The **Wheat Harvest** is those who still need further correction. They will go through the Tribulation for at least three and a half years. These are the saints who did not worship the beast or take the mark of the beast. They are the beheaded saints John saw before the throne in heaven (Revelation 20:4). Clearly, we find two

major groups of people in the heavens - those sitting on the throne (Barley Harvest saints) and the beheaded saints standing before the throne (Wheat Harvest).

No flesh and blood can inherit the Kingdom of God. Therefore, we will all be transformed (changed). The purpose of the resurrection, therefore, is to be transformed, to receive our glorified bodies and stand on the platform of reward, the Bema Seat, to receive rewards for our deeds, whether good or bad.

Only in the middle of the Tribulation will Satan be cast down onto the earth to persecute the woman (Revelation 12:13). The woman is the Nation of Israel, who will be deceived by the antichrist, pretending to be the Messiah. They will go through the wine press and at the end of the seven-year Tribulation accept the Messiah.

Romans 11 will then come into fulfilment when Christ grafts the original branches back into the olive tree. Then there will be only one nation with one King. Gentiles and Jews will be one.

Judgment

Judgment follows resurrection. The first resurrected saints, following the First Fruits, will appear in front of the Bema Seat Judgment to receive their rewards. Both the Barley and Wheat Harvests will appear before the Bema Seat.

After the seven-year Tribulation, the Messiah will return with His Bride to judge the earth and rule and reign for a thousand years. Satan and his demons will be bound in the bottomless pit. The false prophet and the antichrist will go directly into the lake of fire. Then, the nations will

be separated. The goats will be on the left of the Messiah. They are the unrighteous and will also go into the lake of fire. The sheep will stand on His right. They are the righteous who will inherit the Kingdom of God. Predominantly, they will be the nation of Israel, a small remnant which will still marry, have children, and die during the Millennium Reign.

When this will happen

(The full answer to this question is thoroughly discussed in my booklet, "The Snatching Away". Please download it from our website.)

On Mount Olives, Jesus answered questions about when this age would end, when Israel would be restored, and when He would establish His everlasting Kingdom on earth.

And as he sat upon the Mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, ⁴ Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

Mark 13:3-4 KJV

In Matthew 24, Yashuah explains to His disciples the signs of the end.

Deception

Take heed that no man deceive you. Matthew 24:4 KJV

Wars

And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars.

Matthew 24:6a KJV

Famine, Pestilence and Earthquakes

For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. Matthew 24:7 KJV

Worldwide Persecution

Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. Matthew 24:9 KJV

Love shall wax cold

And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. ¹¹ And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. ¹² And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. Matthew 24:10-12 KJV

The Preaching of the Gospel

And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come. Matthew 24:14 KJV

By the time we have witnessed to all the nations of Yashuah's death, burial and resurrection, this age will end, and God will deal with Israel during the seven-year Tribulation period. Immediately after the Tribulation, the Son of Man will return with His Bride to judge the earth (Matthew 24:29).

The Doctrine of Christ has now been discussed in full.

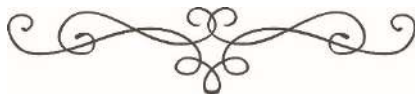
May the Holy Spirit ignite each heart to diligently lay the foundation and build the house. Each of us individually is responsible for our own foundation.

You now have received all the necessary information. Apply it to your blood-bought life! Do not be sidetracked by ignorant and irresponsible people. Prepare yourself to be completely ready, worthy to be raptured and to appear before the Bema Seat of Christ!

Persevere through all trials and hardships! Your reward will be great!

The Spirit and the Bride say, COME!!!

Let the one who hears say, Come!



The Doctrine of Christ

Sound doctrine is deemed necessary for healthy teachings, correction, and a new life that is consistent with the foundational truths of the gospel. A sound doctrine will lead to a pure lifestyle. Paul warned that the time will come when people *"will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; 4 And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables"* (2 Timothy 4:3-4 KJV). These fables refer to false teachings that will lead members astray into wrong practices, deeds, belief systems, and eventually false doctrines and the doctrine of demons.

But the Spirit saith expressly, that in later times some shall fall away from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of demons. 1 Timothy 4:1 ASV

Paul says we should already have been "professors instructing others". We are supposed to be rabbis ourselves, but instead, we need to be taught the basics of God's prophetic oracles! We are like children still needing milk and not yet ready to digest solid food (Hebrews 5:11-14). Paul continues that we must leave the principles of the Doctrine of Christ to go on unto perfection. In Hebrews 6:1-3 KJV, he gives us the Doctrine of Christ (a sound doctrine) for laying down a solid foundation.

- Repentance from dead works,
- Faith toward God,
- The doctrine of baptisms,
- Laying on of hands,
- Resurrection of the dead, and
- Eternal judgment.

"And this will we do, if God permit!" Laying down a solid foundation (a sound doctrine) ensures that the building arises unto perfection under Adonai's supervision and is connected to the Head Cornerstone of the building, the Anointed One, Jesus Christ Himself, who is transforming each one of us into the Holy of Holies, His dwelling place (Ephesians 2:20-22 TPT). *"And then our immaturity will end! And we will not be easily shaken by trouble, nor led astray by novel teachings or by the false doctrines of deceivers who teach clever lies"* (Ephesians 4:14 TPT).

The main purpose of this book is to bring members of the Body unto full spiritual maturity, perfectly prepared to fulfil their assignments (2 Timothy 3:17 TPT).